

University Studies—No. 1.

HISTORY
OF THE
MEDIÆVAL SCHOOL OF
INDIAN LOGIC

BY
MAHĀMAHOPĀDHYĀYA SATIS CHANDRA VIDYABHUSANA,
M.A., PH.D.

*Professor of Sanskrit and Pali, Presidency College, Calcutta; Joint
Philological Secretary, Asiatic Society of Bengal; and
Fellow of the Calcutta University.*

*Thesis approved for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the
University of Calcutta,
1907.*

Calcutta :

PUBLISHED BY THE CALCUTTA UNIVERSITY AND PRINTED
AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS.

1909.

TO
THE HON'BLE MR. JUSTICE ASUTOSH MUKHOPADHYAYA,
SARASVATI, M.A., D L., D.Sc., F.R.A.S., F.R.S.E.,
*Vice-Chancellor of the Calcutta University,
President of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and Chairman of the Board
of Indigenous Sanskrit Education, Bengal,*
WHOSE LIFE IS AN UNBROKEN RECORD
OF LOFTY IDEALS
TRANSLATED INTO PRACTICE,
THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED
IN TOKEN OF PROFOUND ESTEEM
BY
HIS HUMBLE ADMIRER,
THE AUTHOR.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Preface	xiii
Introduction	xvii

BOOK I.

THE JAINA LOGIC.

CHAPTER I.—THE ERA OF TRADITION.

1. The Jinas and Mahāvira	1
2. The Svetāmbaras and Digambaras	2
3. Indrabhūti Gautama	2
4. Canonical Scriptures of the Jainas	3
5. The Dr̥ṣṭivāda	3
6. Logic in the Scriptures	4
7. Hetu	4
8. Four types of Inference	5
9. Bhadra-bāhu	5
10. His date	5
11. His works	6
12. His syllogism	6
13. Ten parts of the syllogism	7
14. Syādvāda	8
15. Seven categories of Syādvāda	8
16. The Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra	8
17. Umāsvāti	8
18. Pramāṇa or valid knowledge	9
19. Indirect knowledge or Parokṣa	10
20. Meanings of Pratyakṣa and Parokṣa	10
21. Naya	11
22. Naigama	11
23. Saṃgraha	11
24. Vyavahāra	11
25. Rju-sūtra	11
26. Śabda	12

CHAPTER II.—THE HISTORICAL PERIOD.

27. The written records of the Jainas	13
28. Siddhasena Divākara	13

	PAGE
29. His Sammatitarka-sūtra	14
30. He converts Vikramāditya to Jainism	14
31. His date	14
32. The Nyāyāvatāra	15
33. Pramāṇa or valid knowledge	15
34. Verbal Testimony	15
35. Inference	16
36. Inference for one's self	16
37. Inference for the sake of others	16
38. Terms of a syllogism	16
39. Importance of the minor term	17
40. Fallacy of the minor term	17
41. Vyāpti or inseparable connection	18
42. Intrinsic inseparable connection	18
43. Extrinsic inseparable connection	18
44. Superfluity of extrinsic inseparable connection	18
45. Fallacy of the middle term	18
46. Fallacy of example	19
47. Fallacies of the homogeneous example	19
48. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example	20
49. Refutation, &c.	21
50. Effect of Pramāṇa	21
51. Naya	21
52. Syādvāda śruta, etc.	22
53. Siddhasena Gaṇi	22
54. Samantabhadra	22
55. His works and date	23
56. The Āptamīmāṃsā	24
57. Non-existence, <i>abhāva</i>	24
58. Existence, <i>bhāva</i> , and <i>sapta-bhaṅgī</i>	25
59. Akalaṅka Deva	25
60. Akalaṅka and his Buddhist antagonist	26
61. Date of Akalaṅka	26
62. Vidyānanda	26
63. Vidyānanda's reference to other philosophers and his date	27
64. Māṇikya Nandi	28
65. The Parīkṣā-mukha-sūtra	28
66. Valid knowledge, Pramāṇa	29
67. Kinds of valid knowledge	29
68. Terms of a syllogism	29
69. Different phases of the reason or middle term	30
70. Perceptible reason in the affirmative form	30
71. Perceptible reason in the negative form	30
72. Imperceptible reason in the negative form	31

	PAGE
73. Imperceptible reason in the affirmative form ..	31
73. Example	31
74. Inference	31
75. Verbal Testimony	32
76. Objects of valid knowledge	32
77. Result of valid knowledge	32
78. Various kinds of fallacies	32
79. Māṇikya Nandi's references to contemporaneous systems of philosophy	33
80. His estimate of the Parīkṣāmukha sūtra	33
81. Prabhā Candra	33
82. Mallavādin	34
83. Dharmottara-tiṣṭhanaka and Mallavādin's date ..	34
84. Pradyumna Sūri	35
85. His date	36
86. Abhayadeva Sūri	36
87. Laghusamantaśhādra	37
88. Anantavīrya	37
89. Deva Sūri	38
90. His triumph over the Digambaras	38
91. His date	39
92. Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra	39
93. Valid knowledge	40
94. Perception (Direct knowledge)	40
95. Indirect knowledge	41
96. Inference	41
97. Parts of a syllogism	42
98. Non-existence (<i>abhāva</i>)	42
99. Character of knowledge	43
100. Fallacies of Naya	43
101. Ātmā (soul)	43
102. Rules of debate	44
103. Hema Candra Sūri	44
104. His Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā	45
105. His date	45
106. Candraprabha Sūri	45
107. Nyāyavatāra-vivṛti	46
108. Nemicandra Kavi	46
109. Ānanda Sūri and Amaracandra Sūri, nicknamed lion-cub and tiger-cub	47
110. Haribhadra Sūri	48
111. His life	49
112. His date	50
113. Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā	50
114. Ratnaprabha Sūri	50

	PAGE
115. Mallisena Sūri	51
116. Rājasékhara Sūri	51
117. Jñāna Candra	51
118. Guṇaratna	52
119. His date	52
120. His references to other philosophers	53
121. Dharmabhūṣaṇa	54
122. His Nyāya-dīpikā	54
123. His references to other philosophers	54
124. Yaśovijaya Gaṇi	54
125. His life	55

BOOK II.

THE BUDDHIST LOGIC.

CHAPTER I.—THE OLD BUDDHIST REFERENCES TO LOGIC.

1. The Buddhas	57
2. Buddha Gautma	57
3. Tripitaka—Pāli Literature	57
4. Heretical Sects of the Buddhists	58
5. Tripitaka carried to Ceylon	58
6. Vijñāna (knowledge)	59
7. Classification of Vijñāna	59
8. Takkika	59
9. Takkika in the Brahma-jāla Sutta	59
10. Takkika in the Udāna	60
11. Logic in the Kathā-vatthupparakāra	60
12. Nyāya in the Milinda-pañha	61
13. The Method of debate	62
14. The Mahāyāna and the Hinayāna	62
15. The Council of Kāṣka	63
16. The Sanskrit Buddhist Literature	63
17. Nava Dharmas	64
18. Hetuvidyā in the Lalitavistara	64
19. Eighteen Sects of the Buddhists	65
20. Four Schools of the Buddhist Philosophy	66
21. The Vaibhāṣika School	66
22. The Sautrāntika School	67
23. Logic in works of the Mādhyamika and Yogācāra Schools	67
24. Ārya Nāgārjuna	68
25. The date of Nāgārjuna	69
26. Nāgārjuna's works	70

	PAGE
27. Ārya Deva	70
28. The Yogācāra School	71
29. The Tārkika and Naiyāyika in the Lankāvatāra Sūtra	72
30. Maitreya	73
31. His Logic	74
32. Ārya Asaṅga	74
33. His Logic	75
34. Vasubandhu	75
35. His Logic	76

CHAPTER II.—SYSTEMATIC BUDDHIST WRITERS ON LOGIC.

36. Logic distinguished from general philosophy ..	78
37. Acārya Dignāga—his likeness	78
38. Life of Dignāga	80
39. His Date	80
40. References to Dignāga	81
41. History of the Pramāṇa-samuccaya and reference to Īśvara-kṛṣṇa	82
42. Xylograph of the work	84
43. Subjects of the work	85
44. Dignāga's Theory of Perception	85
45. Dignāga criticises Vātsyāyana	86
46. Dignāga's Theory of Inference	87
47. Comparison and Verbal Testimony rejected ..	88
48. Dignāga's Nyāya-praveśa	89
49. Parts of a Syllogism	89
50. Form of a Syllogism	90
51. Thesis	90
52. Fallacies of Thesis	90
53. Three Characteristics of the Middle Term	91
54. Symbols of the Characteristics	91
55. Vyāpti or relative extension of the middle term and the major term	92
56. Fallacies of the Middle Term	93
57. Theory of Example	95
58. Fallacies of Homogeneous Example	96
59. Fallacies of Heterogeneous Example	97
60. Refutation and its Fallacy	98
61. Fallacies of Perception and Inference	99
62. Dignāga's Hetu-cakra	99
63. The Wheel of Reasons	100
64. Analysis of the Wheel	100
65. Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti	100
66. Another version of it	100

	PAGE
67. Pramāṇa-sāstra-praveśa	100
68. Ālambāṇa-parikṣā	101
69. Ālambāṇa-parikṣā-vṛtti	101
70. Trikāla-parikṣā	101
71. Śaṅkara Svāmin	101
72. Dharmapāla	102
73. His Works	102
74. Ācārya Śilabhadra	102
75. Ācārya Dharmakīrti	103
76. Dharmakīrti and Kumāṛila	103
77. Dharmakīrti's Triumphs	104
78. His further triumphs.. .. .	104
79. His Death	104
80. Dharmakīrti and Sroṇ-tsan-gam-po	104
81. Dharmakīrti's Date	105
82. History of the Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā	105
83. Subjects of the work	106
84. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti	107
85. Pramāṇa-viniścaya	107
86. Nyāya-bindu	109
87. Theory of Perception.. .. .	109
88. Inference for one's self	110
89. Three kinds of Middle Term	110
90. Inference for the sake of others	111
91. Thesis	112
92. Fallacies of Thesis	112
93. Fallacies of the Middle Term	112
94. Dharmakīrti criticises Dignāga	113
95. Dharmakīrti's theory of example	114
96. Fallacies of Homogeneous Example	115
97. Fallacies of Heterogeneous Example	116
98. Refutation and its semblance	116
99. Dharmakīrti the Vanquisher of Tīrthikas	116
100. Hetu-bindu vivaraṇa	117
101. Tarka-nyāya or Vāda-nyāya	117
102. Santānāntara-siddhi	117
103. Sambandha-parikṣā	118
104. Sambandha-parikṣā-vṛtti	118
105. Devendra bodhi	118
106. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā	118
107. Story of composition of the work	118
108. Śākya bodhi	119
109. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā-ṭīkā	119
110. Vinīta Deva	119
111. Nyāya-bindu-ṭīkā	120

	PAGE
112. Hetu-bindu-tīkā	120
113. Vāda-nyāya-vyākhyā	120
114. Sambandha-parīkṣā-tīkā	120
115. Ālambana-parīkṣā-tīkā	120
116. Santānāntara-siddhi-tīkā	121
117. Candra Gomin	121
118. His Wanderings	122
119. His Date	123
120. Nyāyaloka-siddhi	123
121. Ravi Gupta	123
122. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti	124
123. Viśālamalavatī	124
124. Jinendra Bodhi	124
125. Śānta Raksita	124
126. Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitārtha	125
127. Tattva-saṅgraha-kārikā	125
128. Subject of the work	126
129. Kamala-śīla	129
130. Nyāya-bindu-pūrva-pakṣe-saṅkṣipta	129
131. Tattva-saṅgraha-pañjikā	130
132. Kalyāṇa Raksita	130
133. Vāhyārtha-siddhi-kārikā	130
134. Śruti-parīkṣā	130
135. Anyāpoha-vicāra-kārikā	130
136. Īśvara-bhaṅga-kārikā	130
137. Dharmottarācārya	131
138. Nyāya-bindu-tīkā	131
139. Pramāṇa-parīkṣā	132
140. Apoha-nāma-prakaraṇa	132
141. Pāra-loka-siddhi	132
142. Kṣaṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi	132
143. Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā	132
144. Muktā-kumbha	133
145. Kṣaṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi-vyākhyā	133
146. Arcata	133
147. Hetu-bindu-vivarana	133
148. Dāna-śīla	134
149. Pustaka-pāṭhopāya	134
150. Jina Mitra	135
151. Nyāya-bindu-pindārtha	135
152. Prajñākara Gupta	135
153. Pramāṇa-vārtikālankāra	135
154. Sāhāvalambha-niścaya	136
155. Ācārya Jetāri	136
156. His date	136

	PAGE
157. Hetu-tattva-upadeśa	136
158. Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya	136
159. Bālāvatāra-tarka	137
160. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-tīkā	137
161. Jina	137
162. Jñāna-śrī	137
163. Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā	138
164. Kārya-kāraṇa-bhāva-siddhi	138
165. Tarka-bhāṣā	138
166. Ratnavajra	139
167. Yukti-prayoga	139
168. Ratnākara Śānti and Ratnakīrti	140
169. Vijñapti-mātra-siddhi	140
170. Antar-vyāpti	140
171. Vāk-praja	141
172. Yamāri	141
173. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-tīkā	141
174. Śaṅkarānanda	142
175. Pramāṇa-vārtika-tīkā	142
176. Sambandha-parīkṣānusāra	142
177. Apoha-siddhi	143
178. Pratibandhasiddhi	144

APPENDIX A.

The University of Nālandā	145
-----------------------------------	-----

APPENDIX B.

The Pāla Kings	148
------------------------	-----

APPENDIX C.

The University of Vikramasīlā	150
---------------------------------------	-----

PREFACE.

WITH the object of drawing the attention of scholars to the vast literature of the Mediæval school of Indian Logic, I have in the present thesis embodied the results of some of my researches into it.¹ The Mediæval Logic of India is divided into two principal systems, *viz.*, the Jaina and the Buddhist. The materials of the Jaina portion of my thesis were derived from several rare Jaina manuscripts procured from Western India and the Deccan. I have also used the Jaina manuscripts of the Asiatic Society of Bengal and the numerous Jaina works printed in Bombay, Benares and Calcutta. From the footnotes of my thesis it will be evident that I have frequently used Professor Peterson's Reports of Operations in Search of Sanskrit manuscripts in the Bombay Circle. Though the Professor has said nothing in particular about Logic and Logicians, he has given a general index of Jaina authors which has been of the greatest use to me. I have not heard of any scholar who has yet written any special account of the Jaina Logic. Dr. Herman Jacobi's "Eine Jaina-Dogmatik" printed in Leipzig is an annotated translation of Umāsvāti's Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra, an ancient Jaina work on general philosophy and not a special treatise on Logic. A short time ago I sent a proof of my account of the Jaina Logic to Dr. Jacobi who very graciously returned it with a few marginal glosses which have been most thankfully accepted and embodied in the foot-notes of this thesis.

To show how generously that most eminent authority on Jainism condescended to help me, I quote here the

¹ Some of these researches were published in the "Journal" of the Asiatic Society of Bengal during the last two years.

letter which he wrote in communicating to me his suggestions:

Bonn, 21st October, 1907.

Niebuhrstrasse 59.

DEAR SIR,

I have received your kind letter and the proofs of the *Jaina Logic*, and I heartily congratulate you on the work you have done. It will prove very useful, for you have brought together a mass of information which is not of easy access to many. In looking over the proofs I have made some marginal glosses to show you where I think you might alter your statement. Of course, everything is left to your decision.

I shall be glad to see your whole book, as I take great interest in Indian Logic and I have myself written an article on it principally for the information of our Logicians who as a rule know nothing about what has been done in this branch of Philosophy by Indian thinkers. I shall therefore feel obliged if you can spare me a copy of your work.

With kind regards,

I am,

Yours sincerely,

H. JACOBI.

A proof of the *Jaina Logic* was also sent to two oriental authorities on Jainism—Muni Dharmavijaya and his pupil Śrī Indravijaya at Benares. I owe them a great debt of gratitude for the kind assistance which they cheerfully rendered to me by going through the proof and offering certain suggestions and observations which have been incorporated in the foot-notes of this thesis.

As to the *Buddhist Logic*, no systematic information is available from Pāli texts as there is not a single regular treatise on Logic in the Pāli language; but references to ancient Brahmanic Logic can be gleaned from the publications of the Pali Text Society of London and also from other Pali works printed elsewhere. The *Buddhist Sanskrit* works on Logic of the Middle Age are now almost extinct in India. A few of them, which are available in Chinese versions, have been noticed by Dr. Sugiura in his “*Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan*.” But almost all the *Buddhist Sanskrit* works on Logic

are carefully preserved in faithful translations in Tibet. The materials of that portion of my thesis, which deals with Buddhist Logic, were chiefly derived from the Hodgson Collection of Tibetan xylographs deposited in the India Office, London, and the large number of Tibetan block-prints brought down to Calcutta from Gyantse during the British Mission to Tibet in 1904. I also consulted almost all the Tibetan manuscripts and block-prints bearing on Logic that lie hidden in the Tibetan monasteries of Labrang and Phodang in Sikkim which I visited during May and June 1907.¹ For the historical account of the Buddhist authors I have chiefly depended on Lama Tārānātha's Tibetan history of Indian Buddhism translated into German by A. Schiefner under the designation of "Geschichte des Buddhismus," and the Tibetan historical work called *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited in the original Tibetan by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., in Calcutta. Some most important historical facts regarding the Buddhist Logicians and their works have been discovered from the colophons at the end of each of the Tibetan works which I have examined.

It was mainly through the influence of Mr. F. W. Thomas that I was enabled to borrow the Tibetan xylographs of the India Office, London, and I avail myself of this opportunity of acknowledging my humble appreciation of the generosity of that distinguished scholar. My respectful thanks are also due to the Government of India, who kindly lent me several block-prints out of the vast Tibetan collection brought down to Calcutta by the Tibet Mission of 1904. I should be guilty of great ingratitude if I were not to mention my obligations to Mr. A. Earle, I.C.S., Director of Public Instruction, Bengal, Mr. C. H. Bompas, I.C.S., Deputy Commissioner,

¹ Subsequently in October 1908 I visited Pamiangchi, which is another very old monastery in Sikkim, where all facilities were kindly afforded to me by their Highnesses the Maharaja and Maharani of Sikkim as well as by Mr. Crawford, I.C.S., the then Deputy Commissioner of Darjeeling.—S. C. V.

Darjeeling, and Mr. Claude White, C.I.E., Political Resident, Sikkim, for the kind help they gave me in getting access to the Tibetan Monasteries of Labrang and Phodang in Sikkim.

For a time I was quite bewildered by the enormous store of material on Indian Logic which I had collected, and it took me many a month to select and classify a portion of it for the purpose of this thesis. When the compilation of the paper was finished, and the work was passing through the press, Mr. W. W. Hornell, B.A., of the Indian Educational Service, kindly undertook to revise it, but he was able to revise only the first chapter of the Jaina Logic before leaving India. Accordingly, the rest of the work was, at my request, revised by Mr. W. C. Wordsworth, M.A., of the Presidency College, Calcutta. I am deeply indebted to both these gentlemen for their kind courtesy and assistance.

Whatever the merits or the utility of the present contribution may be, it has had the rare good fortune and privilege of having been looked through by a savant with whom it would be an impertinence to name in the same breath any other living authorities, oriental or occidental, on Indian philosophy. This savant, whose learning is equalled by his modesty and willingness to assist beginners in their uphill work, is no other than our revered Dr. G. Thibaut, M.A., Ph.D., D.Sc., C.I.E., now Registrar of the Calcutta University, which post may he fill long so that our countrymen may continue to derive benefit from his vast erudition.

SATIS CHANDRA VIDYABHUSANA.

INTRODUCTION.

Logic is generally designated in India as Nyāya-śāstra. It is also called Tarka-śāstra, Hetu-vidyā, Pramāṇa-śāstra, Ānvikṣikī and Phakkikā-śāstra.

Indian Logic may be divided into three principal schools, viz., the Ancient (600 B.C.—400 A.D.), the Mediæval (400 A.D.—1200 A.D.), and the Modern (1200 A.D.—1850 A.D.). The Nyāya-sūtra by Aksapāda Gautama is the foremost, though by no means the first, work on Logic of the Ancient School; the Pramāṇa-samuccaya by Dignāga is a representative work of the Mediæval School, while the Tattva cintāmaṇi by Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya is the main text-book of the Modern School. These three works have, since their composition, enjoyed a very wide popularity, as is evident from the numerous commentaries that have from time to time centred round them. A few of the commentaries are mentioned below:—

The Ancient School of Logic.

Text.

1. Nyāya-sūtra by Aksapāda Gautama.

Commentaries.

2. Nyāya bhāṣya by Vātsyāyana.
3. Nyāya-vārtika by Udyotakara.
4. Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-ṭikā by Vācaspati Miśra.
5. Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-ṭikā-parīśuddhi by Udayanācārya.
6. Nyāyālankāra by Śrī Kaṇṭha.
7. Nyāya-vṛtti by Abhayatilakopādhyāya.
8. Nyāya-vṛtti by Viśvanātha.

The Mediæval School of Logic.

Text.

1. Pramāṇa-samuccaya by Dignāga.

Commentaries.

2. Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti by Dignāga.
3. Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā by Dharmakīrti
4. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti by Dharmakīrti.
5. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā by Devendrabodhi.
6. Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā-ṭikā by Śākyabodhi
7. Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti by Ravi Gupta. [drabodhi.]
8. Pramāṇa-samuccaya-ṭikā (Viśālāmalavati-nāma) by Jinen-

9. *Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra* by Prajñākara Gupta.
10. *Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭīkā* by Jina.
11. *Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra* by Yamāri.
12. *Pramāṇa-vārtika-ṭīkā* by Śaṅkarānanda.

The Modern School of Logic.

Text.

1. *Tattva-cintāmaṇi* by Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya.

Commentaries.

2. *Tattva-cintāmaṇi Prakāśa* by Rucidatta.
3. *Tattva Āloka* by Jayadeva Miśra.
4. *Tattva Dīdhiti* by Raghunātha Śiromaṇi.
5. *Tattva Rāhasya* by Mathurānātha.
6. *Tattva Dīpani* by Kṛṣṇakānta.
7. *Tattva Ṭīkā* by Kaṇāda Tarkavāgiśa.
8. *Tattva Āloka-sāra-maṇjarī* by Bhavānanda.
9. *Tattva Āloka-darpaṇa* by Maheśa Ṭhakkura.
10. *Tattva Āloka-kaṇṭhakodhāra* by Mādhu Sūdāna Ṭhakkura.
11. *Tattva Āloka-rahasya* by Mathurānātha. [pati.]
12. *Tattva Dīdhiti-vyākhyā-vivecana* by Rudra Nyāyavācas.
13. *Tattva Dīdhiti-tippaṇi* by Jagadīśa.
14. *Tattva Dīdhiti-ṭīkā* by Gādādhara.
15. *Tattva Dīdhiti-sāramaṇjarī* by Bhavānanda.
16. *Tattva Bhavānandī vyākhyā* by Mahādeva Paṇḍita.
17. *Tattva Kālīśaṅkarī-patrikā* by Kālīśaṅkara.
18. *Tattva Cāndrī-patrikā* by Candra Nārāyaṇa.
19. *Tattva Raudrī-patrikā* by Rudra Nārāyaṇa.

etc.

etc.

etc.

Besides these there are numerous other texts and commentaries on Logic which belong to one or another of the three schools mentioned above.

I shall say here nothing about the ancient and modern schools of Logic, my whole attention will be devoted to the mediæval school alone. The Jaina system of Mediæval Logic. It is perhaps known to very few scholars that the Mediæval Logic was almost entirely in the hands of the Jainas and Buddhists. For one thousand years, from 600 B.C. to 400 A.D., the Jainas and Buddhists were fully occupied in questions of metaphysics and religion though there are occasional references to Logic in their works of that period. At about 400 A.D. began an epoch when they seriously took up the problems of Logic, and all the text-books on the Jaina and Buddhist systems of Logic date at or after that time. Ujjaini in Malwa and Valabhi in Guzerat were the scenes of activity of the Jaina Logicians of the Śvetāmbara sect. The Digambaras flourished principally in Pāṭaliputra and Drāviḍa

(including *Karṇāta*) about the 8th century A.D. The *Nyāyāvatāra* by Siddhasena Divākara, dated about 533 A.D., was the first systematic work on the Jaina Logic.

The real founders of the Mediæval Logic were the Buddhists.

The Buddhist system
of Mediæval Logic.

The first batch of the Buddhist Logicians came principally from Gāndhāra (modern Peshwar) on the Punjab frontier.

Ayodhyā (Oudh) was the scene of their activity. Unfortunately we have not before us any of the original Sanskrit works on Logic produced by them. We may, however, form an approximate estimate of their Logic from the works on the *Yogācāra* philosophy by Maitreya, Asaṅga and Vasubandhu recovered from the Chinese sources. About 500 A.D.¹ the Huns conquered Gāndhāra, and their leaders Mihirakula and others perpetrated terrible atrocities on the Buddhists to the great detriment of Buddhistic studies there. Asaṅga and Vasubandhu (and perhaps Maitreya too) passed the best days of their lives in Ayodhyā and wrote most of their works there. King Vikramāditya who reigned in Ayodhyā about 480 A.D.² was at first a patron of the Sāṃkhya philosophy but afterwards greatly supported Buddhism through the influence of Vasubandhu. Bālāditya, who succeeded Vikramāditya to the throne of Ayodhyā, was a pupil of Vasubandhu and a supporter of Buddhism. The Buddhist Logic of the *Yogācāra* school appears thus to have originated in Ayodhyā and flourished there during 400-500 A.D. under Kings Vikramāditya and Bālāditya.

The second batch of the Buddhist Logicians flourished in Drāviḍa (the Deccan) during 500-700 A.D. when the Buddhist kings of the Pallava dynasty were supreme there. Ācārya Dignāga, about 500 A.D., was the oldest logician of Drāviḍa whose works are still extant, in faithful translations. Another logician of eminence of the Drāviḍa school was Dharmakīrti who lived about 650 A.D. His *Nyāyabindu*, and a commentary on it by Dharmottara called *Nyāya-bindu-ṭīkā*, are the only systematic works on Buddhist Logic which have come down to us in their Sanskrit originals. They would have certainly disappeared from India like a hundred other works of their kind, had it not been that a Jaina logician named Mallavādin had written a gloss on them. Seeing that the gloss would be useless without the text and commentary, the Jainas preserved all three. The *Nyāyabindu*, together with the commentary, preserved

¹ Vide Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. I., pp. xv, 168.

² Vide Takakusu's *Paramārtha's Life of Vasubandhu* published in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, January 1905, p. 36.

among the palm-leaf manuscripts in the Jaina temple of Sānti-nātha, Cambay, has been published by Professor Peterson in the Bibliotheca Indica series of Calcutta. With the downfall of the Pallavas, Logic disappeared from Drāviḍa. Vinayāḍitya of the Western Chalukya dynasty about 696 A.D. put a check to the power of the Pallavas, while Vikramāḍitya II, of the same dynasty, about 733 A.D., seized Kāñci, their capital.¹ The Chalukyas were Vaisnavas, and their conquest of Kāñci was really a triumph of the Brahmanic religion over Buddhism. At about 788 A.D. the great Brāhmaṇa preacher Śaṅkarācārya appeared, and Buddhism became gradually extinct in Drāviḍa.

The third and fourth batches of Buddhist Logicians flourished simultaneously in Kāśmīra and Bengal (including Behar). Ravi Gupta, 725 A.D., was the earliest logician of the Kāśmīra school. At this time Kāśmīra was governed by the illustrious King Lalitāḍitya or Muktāpīḍa (about 695—732 A.D.), who built a large vihāra with a stūpa at Huskapur.² At the same time there was a great demand for Sanskrit Buddhist books in Tibet with the thorough opening of her intercourse with India in the 8th century A.D. King Khri-ral (otherwise known as Ral-pa-can) in the 9th century A.D. employed numerous Indian Pandits and Tibetan Lamas to translate Sanskrit books into Tibetan. The propaganda of translations went on in full force up to about 1101 A.D., when the glorious reign of Śrī Harṣa Deva (1089—1101 A.D.), who was a patron of learning, both Brāhmaṇic and Buddhist,³ came to a close. The Buddhist monasteries and Tibetan Lamas did not altogether disappear from Kāśmīra until the establishment of Mahomedan rule in that country in 1341 A.D., when her intercourse with Tibet ceased. Henceforth we hear no more of logicians flourishing in Kāśmīra.

In Bengal and Behar Logic flourished extensively during 700-1200 A.D., when the Buddhist kings of the Pāla dynasty reigned there. Candra Gomin, about 700 A.D., was the first logician of the Bengal school. With the downfall of the Pāla kings in 1139 A.D., Buddhist Logic disappeared from Bengal. The splendid monastery of Vikramaśilā is said to have been destroyed in 1203 A.D. (*vide* Appendix C).

In the Middle Age there were several important universities or centres of Buddhist learning in India, such as Kāñcīpura, Nālandā, Odantapuri, Śrī Dhānyakaṭaka, Kāśmīra and

Vide Sewell's "Antiquities of Madras," vol. II, pp. 150-151.

² Vide Stein's translation of Rājatarāṅgiṇī IV—188.

³ Dharmottarācārya's Pāralokasiddhi was translated into Tibetan in Kāśmīra at the monastery of Ratnaraśmi during the reign of Śrī Harṣa (*vide* Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 270).

Vikramasīlā. The Buddhist logicians belonged to one or another of these universities or centres of learning. On the extinction of these Buddhistic universities, the Brahmanic universities of Mithilā and Nadia grew up. These last, in their turn, are now declining, being unable to make headway against the more scientific methods of study which are developing under the influence of the Calcutta University, established by the Imperial British Government in 1857, with the object of encouraging Eastern and Western learning side by side. In spite of strenuous efforts made by the British Government to foster study and research in Indigenous Logic, it is still at its lowest ebb, as the degrees of a modern University are held in greater regard than those of the archaic Universities of Mithilā and Nadia; and as it is often alleged that in comparison with the Logic of Europe, Indian Logic though subtle is cumbrous in its method, forbidding in its language, and less profitable in its material results.

SATIS CHANDRA VIDYABHUSANA.

CALCUTTA,
December, 1907.

BOOK I.

The Jaina Logic.

CHAPTER I.

THE ERA OF TRADITION (*circa* 607 B.C.—453 A.D.).

THE JINAS AND MAHĀVĪRA.

1. The Jinas maintain that their religion is coeval with time. According to their traditions there appeared at various periods in the world's history sages whom they call *Jinas*, conquerors of their passions, or *Tīrthaṅkaras*, that is, builders of a landing place in the sea of existence. These sages preached the religion of the Jainas. The Jainas hold that in every cycle of time (*utsarpiṇī* or *avasarpinī-kāla*) 24 sages are born. The first sage of the last series was Rṣabhadeva, the 24th was Mahāvīra or Vardhamāna, who attained *nirvāṇa* at Pāvā in 527 B.C.¹ The scriptures which the Jainas obey are founded on the teachings of Mahāvīra. No one disputes this, and scholars generally regard Mahāvīra as the founder of Jainism, and hold that the theory of the existence of *Jinas* previous to him, except Pārśvanātha the 23rd Tīrthakara, was a subsequent invention.

¹ पण्डितस्य वचनं पणमास जुहं गमिष्य वीरणिबुद्धो समराजो । (Trilokasāra of the Digambara sect). "Mahāvīra attained nirvāṇa 605 years 5 months before the Śaka King (78 A.D.) came to the throne," that is, in 527 B.C. As he lived 72 years he must have been born in 599 B.C.

According to Vicāraśreṇī of Merutuṅga, Tīrthakalpa of Jinaprabha Sūri, Vicāra-sāra-prakarāṇa, Tapāgaccha-pattāvalī, etc., of the Svetāmbara sect Mahāvīra attained *nirvāṇa* 470 years before Vikrama Saṁvat or in B.C. 527.

Dr. Jacobi of Bonn, in his letter dated the 21st October 1907, kindly writes to me as follows :—

"There is however another tradition which makes this event [*viz.* the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvīra] come off 60 years later, in 467 B.C. (see *Parīkṣita Parvan*, Introduction, p. 4 f.; also *Kalpasūtra*, Introduction, p. 8). The latter date cannot be far wrong because Mahāvīra died some years before the Buddha whose death is now placed between 470-480 B.C."

THE SVETĀMBARAS AND THE DIGAMBARAS.

2. The Jainas are divided into two sects, the *Svetāmbaras*, those who are clothed in white, and the *Digambaras*, those who are sky-clad or naked. The *Svetāmbaras* claim to be more ancient than the *Digambaras*, whose existence as a separate sect is said to date from A.D. 82,¹ i.e., 609 years after the attainment of *nirvāṇa* by Mahāvira.

INDRABHŪTI GAUTAMA (607 B.C.—515 B.C.).

3. The teachings of Mahāvira as represented in the scriptures are said to have been collected² by a disciple of his called Indrabhūti. This disciple is often known as Gautama or Gotama. He was a *Kevalin*³ and the first of the Gaṇa-dharas⁴ or leaders of the assembly. His father's name was Brāhmaṇa Vasubhūti, and his mother's name was Brāhmaṇi Prthvī. He was born in

¹ The Svetāmbaras say :—**हव्यास स्यादं नवुत्तरादं तईया सिद्धिं गयस्स वीरस्स नो कोटियाण दिट्ठो रत्तवीरपुं ससुयस्सा ।** "The Digambara doctrine was preached in Rathavānapura 609 years after the attainment of *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira" (Āvaśyaka nirvukti—52). But the Digambaras deny this and say that the Svetāmbaras rose in Vikrama 136 or 79 A.D. Cf. Bhadrabāhucarita IV. 55 :

सुते विक्रमभूपाक्षे षट्चिंशदधिके शते ।

गतेऽब्दानामभूक्षोके मतं सुताम्बराभिधम् ।

² **अथ सत्यर्विसम्पन्नं श्रुताथं जिनभाषितम् ।**

द्वादशाङ्गश्रुतं स्वयं संपादं गौतमो व्यधात् ॥

(Jaina Harivamśa Purāṇa)

Indrabhūti (Gautama and Sudharma Svāmi) were the joint compilers of the Jaina scriptures. But Indrabhūti became a *Kevalin* or attained *kevalajñāna* (absolute knowledge) on the day on which Mahāvira attained *nirvāṇa*. He did not therefore occupy the chair of his teacher Mahāvira, but relinquished it to his spiritual brother Sudharma Svāmi. Cf.

इन्द्रभूति प्रभूतौ नो विपदी व्याहरत् प्रभुः ॥ (Hemacandra's Mahāvīracarita, chap. v, MSS. lent by Muni Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya).

³ Possessor of absolute knowledge. For a further reference to this title see R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 122

⁴ **यत्प्रज्ञाप्रसरेऽतिशयिनि तथा प्राक्षेयशैलोऽप्यक्षे**

केनो गौरचरन्निपद्यपि यथा सद्यः पदेः कोटिशः ।

अङ्गोपाङ्गमहोदया समभवत्तैलोक्यसंचारिणो

वन्द्योऽसौ गणेश्वरगणेश्वरगर्वनैकभूतिः सताम् ॥ ४ ॥

(Siddhayananti-caritra-ṭīkā, noticed in Peterson's 3rd Report, App. I, p. 38.)

the village of Gorbara¹ in Magadha and died at Guṇava in Rājagṛha (Rājgir) at the age of ninety-two, 12 years after the attainment of *nirvāṇa* by Mahāvira. Assuming that Mahāvira attained *nirvāṇa* in 527 B.C., Indrabhūti's birth must be assigned to 607 B.C. and his death to 515 B.C.

THE CANONICAL SCRIPTURES OF THE JAINAS.

4. Those scriptures of the Jainas which are generally regarded as canonical are divided into 45 *siddhāntas* or *āgamas* classified as 11 Āgas, 12 Upāngas, etc. "For the benefit of children, women, the old, and the illiterate,"² these were composed in the Ardha-Māgadhī or Prakṛita language. On the same principle the scriptures of the Buddhist canon were originally written in Māgadhī or Pāli. It is maintained that originally the Āgas were 12 in number. The 12th Āga, which was called the Dr̥ṣṭivāda or the presentation of views, was written in Sanskrit.³

5. The Dr̥ṣṭivāda is not extant. It consisted apparently of five parts, in the first of which logic is said to have been dealt with. The Dr̥ṣṭivāda is reputed to have existed in its entirety at the time of Sthūlabhadra⁴ who, according to the Tapāgachapattāvalī, died in the year in which the 9th Nanda was killed by Candra Gupta (i.e., about 327 B.C.). By 474 A.D. the Dr̥ṣṭivāda

१ श्रीमन्मंलगधेषु गोरं इति यामोऽभिरामः श्रिया
ततोऽप्यज्ञानसङ्घचित्तमनिशं श्रीवैरमेवाविधौ ।
ज्योतिःसंश्रयगौतमान्धविविधप्रद्योतनस्योमणिं
तापोनौर्णसुवर्णवर्णवपुषं भक्त्येन्द्रभूतिं सुवे ॥

(Gotamastotra by Jinaprabha Sūri, extracted in Kāvya-mālā, 7th Guccaka, p. 110).

² For particulars about Indrabhūti Gautama, vide Dr. J. Klatt's Pattāvalī of the Kharaturaga-cha in the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 246; and Weber's Die Handschriften-verzeichnisse der Königl. Bibliothek zu Berlin, pp. 983 and 1030, in which are noticed Sarvarājagan's Vṛtti on Gṛnadhara-sārdha-śatakam of Jinadattasūri, and Sri-pattāvalī vācanā of the Kharaturaga-cha.

³ Haribhadra-sūri, in his Daśa-vaiśālīka-vṛtti (Chap. III), observes:—

बालसौष्टवसूचीणां कणां चारिवकाङ्क्षिणाम् ।
अनुपद्वयार्थं तत्त्वज्ञैः सिद्धान्तः प्राकृतः कृतः ॥

⁴ Vardhamāna-sūri, in his Ācāra-dinakara, quotes the following passage from Āgama:—

सुमूण दिङ्निवार्यं कालिय उज्जालियंगं सिद्धंतं ।
यो बालवायणत्वं पादय सुदयं जिनवरिचं ॥

⁵ Vide Cūṛṇika of Nandī Sūtra, page 478, published by Dhanapat Sing, Calcutta, and Peterson's 4th Report on Sanskrit MSS., p. cxxxvi.

had disappeared altogether. Nothing is known as to the way in which logic was treated in the Dṛṣṭivāda.¹

6. The subject-matter of logic is touched upon in several of the 45 Prakṛta scriptures of the Jains. In the *Anuyoga-dvāra-sūtra*,² *Sthānāṅga-sūtra*, *Nandi-sūtra*, etc., there is a description of *Naya*, or the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints. In the *Nandi-sūtra*, *Sthānāṅga-sūtra*, *Bhagavati-sūtra*, etc.,³ there is a complete classification of valid knowledge (*Pramāṇa*).

7. The word “*Hetu*” is found in these Prakṛta scriptures, but its use in these works makes it clear that it had not at this period acquired a very definite significance. In the *Sthānāṅga-sūtra*⁴ it is used not only in the sense of reason, but also as a synonym for valid knowledge (*Pramāṇa*) and inference (*Anumāna*). *Hetu* as identical with valid knowledge (*Pramāṇa*) is stated to be of four kinds, viz:—

- (1) knowledge derived from perception (*Pratyakṣa*);
- (2) knowledge derived from inference (*Anumāna*);
- (3) knowledge derived through comparison (*Upamāna*); and
- (4) knowledge derived from verbal testimony or reliable authority (*Āgama*).

¹ For a full history of the Dṛṣṭivāda (called in Prakṛta Dittivāda) see Weber's *Sacred Literature of the Jains*, translated by Weir Smyth in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XX, May 1891, pp. 170-182.

² In the *Anuyoga-dvāra-sūtra* *Naya* is divided into seven kinds, viz., *naigama*, *saṃgraha*, *vyavahāra*, *nyū-sūtra*, *śabda*, *saṃabhirūḍha* and *evambhūta*. For an explanation of these terms see Umāsvatī (in articles 21-26), who instead of dividing *Naya* into seven kinds, first divides it into five kinds, and then subdivides one of the five, viz., *śabda*, into three kinds.

³ In the *Sthānāṅga-sūtra* knowledge (*jñāna*) is divided into (1) *Pratyakṣa* (direct knowledge) and (2) *Parokṣa* (indirect knowledge). *Pratyakṣa* again is subdivided as *Kevala jñāna* (entire knowledge) and *Akevala jñāna* (defective knowledge). The *Akevala jñāna* is subdivided as *avadhi* and *manah-paryāya*. The *Parokṣa jñāna* is subdivided as *abhini-bodha* (*matī*) and *śruta*. Vide the *Sthānāṅga-sūtra*, pp. 45-48, and the *Nandi-sūtra*, pp. 120-134; both published by Dhanapati Sing and printed in Calcutta. See also what is said in the account of Umāsvatī *seq.*

⁴ अथवा हेतु चतुर्विधे पञ्चते तं जडा
पञ्चके अनुमाने त्वमे जागरे ।
अथवा हेतु चतुर्विधे पञ्चते तं जडा
अथ तं अथि वा हेतु अथि तं ।
अथि वा हेतु अथि तं अथि वा
हेतु अथि तं अथि वा हेतु ॥

(*Sthānāṅga-sūtra*, pp. 309-310, published by Dhanapati Sing and printed in Calcutta.)

8. When *Hetu* is used in the sense of inference (*Anumāna*), it is classified according to the following types :—

- (1) This *is*, because that *is* : There is a fire, because there is smoke.
- (2) This *is not*, because that *is* : It is not cold, because there is a fire.
- (3) This *is*, because that *is not* : It is cold here, because there is no fire.
- (4) This *is not*, because that *is not* : There is no *śimśapā* tree here, because there are no trees at all.¹

BHADRABĀHU (433—357 B.C.).

9. An elaborate discussion of certain principles of logic is found in a Prakṛta commentary on the Daśa-vaikālika-sūtra called *Daśavaikālika-niryukti*. This commentary was the work of one Bhadrabāhu² of the Prācina Gotra. For 45 years this sage lived the ordinary life of the world ; 17 years he passed in the performance of religious vows (*Vratas*) and for 14 years he was acknowledged by the Jainas to be the foremost man of his age (*Yuga-pradhāna*).³ He was a *Srutakevalin*,⁴ that is, one versed in the 14 *Purvas* of the *Dṛṣṭivada*.

10. The abovementioned incidents are generally accepted as facts in the life of the author of the commentary. There is some doubt, however, as to the time in which he lived.⁵ According to the records⁶ of the *Svetāmbaras* he was born in 433 B.C. and died in 357 B.C. The *Digambaras*, however, maintain there were two Bhadrabahus ; that the first lived to 162 years from the *nirvāṇa*

¹ Vide footnote 4 on page 4.

² For particulars vide Dr. J. Klatt's *Kharatarnagaccha-puttāvali* in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 247 ; Weber II, p. 999 ; Peterson's 4th Report on Sanskrit MSS., p. lxxxiv ; and Dr. H. Jacobi's edition of the *Kalpasūtra*, Introduction, pp. 11-15.

³ In the *Vicāra-ratna-saṃgraha* by Jayasoma-sūri noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report on Sanskrit MSS., pp. 307-308, Bhadrabāhu is included among the *Yuga-pravaras* or *Yuga-pradhānas*.

⁴ For further particulars about this title see R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 122.

⁵ In Weber II, p. 999, in which the *Gurvāvali-sūtra* of Mahopādhyāya Dharmasāgaragunī is noticed, we read of Sambhūtivijaya and Bhadrabāhu "Ubhaupi saṣṭhaparṭadharmu."

⁶ अथस्मिन् पूर्ववृत्तां द्वितीयः

श्रीभद्रबाहुस्य (१) गुहः शिवाय ।

छत्तोपसर्गादिहरस्त्वर्थो

ररत्त सङ्गं धरणाचिन्ताङ्घ्रिः ॥ १२ ॥

निर्यत सिद्धान्तपथोधिप्राप

स्वरथश्च वीरात्त अनगेन्द्रवर्षे १०० ।

of Mahāvira, that is, up to 365 B.C., and that the second¹ to 515 years from the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira, that is, up to 12 B.C. They do not state definitely which of these Bhadrabāhus was the author of the Daśavaikālika-niryukti, but they hold the view that the second was the author of several of the existing Jaina works. The *Svetāmbaras* records do not contain any mention of the second Bhadrabāhu, but in the *Rāmāṇḍala-prakarāṇa-vṛtti*,² a commentary of the *Svetāmbaras*, and in the *Caturvīṃśati-prabandha* it is stated that Bhadrabāhu lived in the south in Pratiṣṭhāna and was a brother of Varāhamihira. Now Varāhamihira is popularly believed to have lived in the first century B.C. It is possible therefore, even according to the *Svetāmbaras*, that the Daśavaikālika-niryukti was the work of a commentator who, to rely on popular belief, lived about the time of the opening of the Christian era.

11. Whenever he lived, the author of the Daśavaikālikaniryukti also wrote commentaries (niryuktis) on the following Jaina scriptures :—*Āvaśyaka-sūtra*, *Utarādhyayana-sūtra*, *Acārāṅga-sūtra*, *Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-sūtra*, *Daśāsruta-skandha-sūtra*, *Kalpa-sūtra*, *Vyavahāra-sūtra*, *Sūrya-prajñapti-sūtra*, and *Reṣibhāsita-sūtra*.

12. Bhadrabāhu did not set himself to analyse knowledge with the object of evolving a system of logic. His object was to illustrate the truth of certain principles of the Jaina religion. To do this, he, in his Daśavaikālika-niryukti,³ elaborated a syllogism consisting of ten parts (*daśāraṇya-rākya*) and then demonstrated how the religious principles of Jainism satisfied the conditions of this formula.

तथाविधैः कृतविचमदः

शौचलभद्वय ददातु मर्ष ॥ १४ ॥

Gurvāvali by Munisundara-sūri published in the *Jaina Yaśovijaya-granthamālā* of Benares, p. 4.

¹ *Vide* the *Sarasvatī-gaccha-paṭṭavālī* in the *Indian Antiquary*, October 1891, and March 1892.

² *Vide* Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Reports on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, p. 138. Bhadrabāhu must have lived as late as the 6th century A.D., if he was really a brother of that Varāhamihira who was one of the nine Gems at the court of Vikramāditya. Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya maintain that Bhadrabāhu's brother was not the same Varāhamihira that adorned the court of Vikramāditya.

³ ते उ पदस्य विभक्तौ जेड-विभक्तौ विवक्ष्यपडिसेहो ।

दिहुते आसंका तयडिसेहो निगमणं च ॥ १४१ ॥

Daśavaikālika-niryukti, p. 74, published under the patronage of Dhanapat Sing by the Nirṇaya Sūgara Press, Bombay; and Dr. E. Loumann's edition of Daśavaikālika-niryukti, p. 649.

13. The following is an example:—

(1) The proposition (*Pratijñā*),—“to refrain from taking life
The Syllogism. is the greatest of virtues.”

(2) The limitation of the proposition (*Pratijñā-vibhakti*)—“to refrain from taking life is the greatest of virtues according to the Jaina scriptures.”

(3) The reason (*Hetu*),—“to refrain from taking life is the greatest of virtues, because those who so refrain are loved by the gods and to do them honour is an act of merit for men.”

(4) The limitation of the reason (*Hetu-vibhakti*),—“none but those who refrain from taking life are allowed to reside in the highest place of virtue.”

(5) The counter-proposition (*Vipakṣa*),—“but those who despise the Jaina scriptures and take life are said to be loved by the gods and men regard doing them honour as an act of merit. Again, those who take life in sacrifices are said to be residing in the highest place of virtue. Men, for instance, salute their fathers-in-law as an act of virtue, even though the latter despise the Jaina scriptures and habitually take life. Moreover, those who perform animal sacrifices are said to be beloved of the gods.”

(6) The opposition to the counter-proposition (*Vipakṣa-pratiṣedha*),—“those who take life as forbidden by the Jaina scriptures do not deserve honour, and they are certainly not loved by the gods. It is as likely that fire will be cold as that they are loved by the gods or that it is regarded by men as an act of merit to do them honour. Buddha, Kapila and others, really not fit to be worshipped, were honoured for their miraculous sayings, but the Jaina *Tirthuṅkaras* are honoured because they speak absolute truth.”

(7) An instance or example (*Dṛṣṭānta*),—“the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* do not even cook food, lest in so doing they should take life. They depend on householders for their meals.”

(8) Questioning the validity of the instance or example (*Āśaṅkā*),—“the food which the householders cook is as much for the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* as for themselves. If, therefore, any insects are destroyed in the fire, the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* must share in the householders' sin. Thus the instance cited is not convincing.”

(9) The meeting of the question (*Āśaṅkā-pratiṣedha*),—“the *Arhats* and *Sādhus* go to householders for their food without giving notice and not at fixed hours. How, therefore, can it be said that the householders cooked food for the *Arhats* and *Sādhus*? Thus the sin, if any, is not shared by the *Arhats* and *Sādhus*.”

(10) Conclusion (*Nigamana*),—"to refrain from taking life is therefore the best of virtues, for those who so refrain are loved by the gods, and to do them honour is an act of merit for men."

14. Bhadrabāhu in his *Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-niryukti*¹ mentions another principle of the Jaina logic called *Syādvāda* (*Syat* "may be" and *Vāda* "assertion," or the assertion of possibilities) or *Sapta-bhaṅgī-naya* (the sevenfold parallogism).

15. The *Syādvāda*² is set forth as follows:—(1) May be, it is, (2) may be, it is not, (3) may be, it is and it is not, (4) may be, it is indescribable, (5) may be, it is and yet is indescribable, (6) may be, it is not and it is also indescribable, (7) may be, it is and it is not and it is also indescribable.

UMĀSVĀTĪ (1—85 A.D.).

16. Jaina philosophy recognises seven categories, *viz.*, (1) the soul (*Jīva*), (2) the soul-less (*Ajīva*), (3) action (*Āśrava*), (4) bondage (*Bandha*), (5) restraint (*Samvara*), (6) destruction of the consequences of action (*Nirjarā*), and (7) release or salvation (*Mokṣa*). According to the *Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra* which with a *Bhāṣya* or commentary was composed by one Umāsvāti, these categories can only be comprehended by *Pramāṇa*, which in this *sūtra* fluctuates between the two meanings of valid knowledge and the sources of valid knowledge, and of *Naya*, the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints.

17. This Umāsvāti is better known as Vacaka-śramaṇa : he was also called Nāgaravācaka, this title being probably a reference to his Śākhā (spiritual genealogy). The Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya calls him Umāsvāti-vācakācārya.³ He lived for 48 years, 8 months, and 6 days and attained *nirvāṇa* in Samvat

१ अविशयस्य किरियाणं

अकिरियाणं च होइ चुलसीति ।

अभाषिय सप्तद्वे

वेषइयाणं च बसोस ॥ ११ ॥

(*Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-niryukti*, skandha 1, adhyāya 12, p. 448, edited by Bhim Sing Manak and printed in the *Nir-naya Sāgara Press, Bombay*.)

Cf. *Sthānāṅga Sūtra*, p. 316. published by Dhanapat Sing, Benares edition.

² Cf. *Sarvadarśana saṁgraha* translated by Cowell and Gough, p. 55. For full particulars about *Syādvāda* or *Sapta-bhaṅgī-naya* vide *Sapta-bhaṅgī-taraṅgiṇī* by Vimala Dāsa printed in Bombay.

³ Vide *Sarvadarśana-saṁgraha*, chapter on Jaina darśana.

142, i.e., in 85 A.D. In the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra Umāsvāti gives the following account ¹ of himself :—He was born in a village called Nyagrodhikā, but he wrote the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra in Pātālīputra or Kusumapura (modern Patna). He belonged to the Kaubhīṣaṇin-gotra. His father was Svāti and he was consequently sometimes called Svāti-tanaya. He was also known as Vatsī-sūta, because his mother was Umā of the Vatsa-gotra. In the Tirthakalpa of Jinaprabhā-sūri it is stated that Umāsvāti was the author of 500 Sanskrit prakaraṇas (treatises). He is said to have belonged to the *Svetāmbara* sect though, as stated in article 2 above, it is probable that the distinction between that sect and the *Digambaras* had not yet come into existence.

18. It has been observed in article 16 above that in the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra *Pramāṇa* fluctuates between the meanings of valid knowledge and the sources of valid knowledge. In its former sense

Parokṣa, indirect knowledge,
and *Pratyakṣa*, direct knowledge.

न्ययोधिकाप्रकृतेन विचरता पुरवर्गं कुसुमनाम्नि ।
कौभीषणिना स्वातितनयेन वान्छीसुतेनार्थम् ॥ २ ॥
अर्चदचनं सम्यग्ब्रह्ममेवागतं समुपधार्य ।
दुःखार्तिं च दुरागमविहतमतिं लोकमवलोक्य ॥ ४ ॥
इदमुच्चैर्नागरवाचकेन सत्त्वानुकम्पया द्रव्यम् ।
तत्तार्थाधिगमाख्यं स्पष्टमुमास्त्रातिना शास्त्रम् ॥ ५ ॥

(Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, Chap. X,
p. 233, edited by Mody Keshavlal
Premchand in the Bibliotheca Indica
Series, Calcutta.)

A similar account is found in the commentary on the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra by Siddhasamgani. This account is mentioned by Peterson in his 4th Report on Sanskrit Manuscripts, p. xvi.

For Further particulars about Umāsvāti see Peterson's 4th Report on Sanskrit Manuscripts, p. xvi, where he observes that in the Digambara Pattāvalī published by Dr. Hoernle in the Indian Antiquary, XX, p. 341. Umāsvāmin (probably the same as Umāsvāti) is included as the sixth Digambara Sūri of the Sarasvatigaccha, between Kundakunda and Lohācārya II. According to Dr. Hoernle (*vide* "Two Pattāvalis of the Sarasvatigaccha" by Dr. Hoernle in the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XX, October 1891, p. 351) the date of Umāsvāmin's accession is 44 A.D., and he lived for 84 years, 8 months and 6 days. Dr. Hoernle adds. the Kāsthāsamgha arose in the time of Umāsvāmin.

Umāsvāti's Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra with his *bhāṣya*, together with Pūjā-prakaraṇa, Jambudvīpa-samāsa and Praśamaratī, has been published by the Asiatic Society of Bengal, Calcutta, in one volume which ends thus :—

कृतिः सिताम्बराचार्यस्य महाकवेरमास्त्रातिनाचकस्य इति ॥

(Jambudvīpa-samāsa, p. 38. published
as Appendix C to the Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra in the Bibliotheca Indica Series.)

Pramāṇa, according to this Sūtra, is of two kinds: (1) *Parokṣa*, indirect knowledge, which is acquired by the soul through external agencies such as the organs of sense, and (2) *Pratyakṣa*, direct knowledge which is acquired by the soul without the intervention of external agencies. *Parokṣa*, indirect knowledge, includes *matī*¹ and *śruta*, for these are acquired by the soul through the medium of the senses and the mind. Knowledge which is attained by *Yoga* (concentration) in its three stages of *avadhi*, *manahparyāya* and *kevala* is a species of *Pratyakṣa*, direct knowledge, because it is acquired by the soul not through the medium of the senses.

19. Umāsvāti contends² that inference (*Anumāna*), comparison (*Upamāna*), verbal testimony or reliable authority (*Āgama*), presumption (*Arthāpatti*), probability (*Sambhava*), and non-existence (*Abhāva*) are not distinct sources of valid knowledge: he includes them under *Parokṣa* (indirect knowledge). According to his theory the majority of them are the result of the contact of the senses with the objects which they apprehend; and some of them are not sources of valid knowledge at all.

20. It is interesting to note that according to Umāsvāti and the earlier Jaina philosophers all sense-perceptions (visual perception, auditory perception, etc.) are indirect apprehensions in as much as the soul acquires them not of itself but through the medium of the senses. The words *Parokṣa* and *Pratyakṣa* are thus used by these authors in senses quite opposite to those which they bear both in Brāhmanic logic and in the later Jaina logic.

¹ *Matī* is knowledge of existing things acquired through the senses and the mind.

Śruta is knowledge of things (past, present and future) acquired through reasoning and study.

Avadhi is knowledge of things beyond the range of our perception.

Manahparyāya is knowledge derived from reading the thoughts of others.

Kevala is unobstructed, unconditional and absolute knowledge.

² In the *bhāṣya* on aphorism 12, of chapter I of the *Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra*, Umāsvāti observes:—

अनुमानोपमानागमार्थपत्तिरक्षवाभावानपि च प्रमाणातीति केषिन्नान्ये
तत्कथमेतदिति अचोच्यते । सर्वाण्येतानि मतिश्रुतयोरन्तर्दूतानि इन्द्रियार्थसन्निकर्ष-
निमित्तान्तात् ॥ (Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, p. 15).

In his *bhāṣya* on 1—35 of the *Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra* Umāsvāti observes:—

चतुर्विधमित्येके ।

(Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, p. 9.)

In his *bhāṣya* on 1—35 he mentions the four *Pramāṇas* thus:—

यथा वा प्रत्यक्षानुमानोपमानागमवचनैः प्रमाणैर्कोऽर्थः प्रमोयते स्वविषय-
नियमात् न च ता विप्रतिपक्षयो भवन्ति तद्वद्वयवादा इति ॥

(Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, p. 35).

21. *Naya*¹ is the method by which things are comprehended from particular standpoints. It is of five

Naya, the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints.

kinds:—(1) *Naigama*, the non-distinguished (2) *Samgraha*, the general, (3) *Vyavahāra*, the practical, (4) *Rju-sūtra*, the straight expression, (5) *Sabda*, the verbal.

22. *Naigama*, the non-distinguished, is the method by which an object is regarded as possessing both

Naigama.

general and specific properties, no distinction being made between them. For instance, when you use the word "bamboo," you are indicating a number of properties, some of which are peculiar to the bamboo, while others are possessed by it in common with other trees. You do not distinguish between these two classes of properties.

23. *Samgraha*, the collective, is the method which takes into consideration generic properties only, ignoring particular properties.

Samgraha.

24. *Vyavahāra*, the practical, is the method which takes into consideration the particular only. The

Vyavahāra.

general without the particular is a nonentity. If you ask a person to bring you a plant, he must bring you a particular plant, he can not bring plant in general.

25. *Rju-sūtra*, the straight expression, is the method which considers a thing as it exists at the moment, without any reference to its past or its future. It is vain to ponder over a thing as it was in the past or as it will be in the future. All practical purposes are served by considering the thing itself as it exists at the present moment. For instance, a man who in a previous birth was my son is now born as a prince, but he is of no practical use to me now. The method of *Rju-sūtra* recognises nothing but the entity itself (*bhāva*) and does not consider the name (*nāma*), the image (*sthāpanā*), or the causes which constituted it (*dravya*). The fact that a cowherd is called *Indra* does not make him lord of the heavens. An image of a king can not perform the functions of a king. The causes which exist in me now and will necessitate my being born hereafter with a different body can not enable me to enjoy that body now.

Rju-sūtra.

These four kinds of *Pramāṇa* seem to refer to those in the *Nyāya Sūtra* of the Hindu logician Aksapāda Gautama. But the same four kinds are also referred to as sub-divisions of *Hetu* in the *Sthānāṅga Sūtra* of the Jains, p. 309, published by Dhanapat Sing and printed in Calcutta.

¹ नैगमसंग्रहव्यवहारजुसूत्रा नयाः ॥ १-२४ ॥

(*Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra*, p. 32.)

26. *Sabda*,¹ the verbal, is the method of correct nomenclature.

Sabda.

It is of three kinds, viz., *Sāmprata*, the suitable, *Samabhirūḍha*, the subtle, and *Evambhūta*, the such-like. In Sanskrit a jar is called *ghaṭa*, *kumbha* or *kalasa*, and these are synonymous terms. *Sāmprata* consists in using a word in its conventional sense, even if that sense is not justified by its derivation. For example the word "*Satru*" according to its derivation means "destroyer," but its conventional meaning is "enemy." *Samabhirūḍha* consists in making nice distinctions between synonyms, selecting in each case the word which on etymological grounds is the most appropriate. *Evambhūta* consists in applying to things such names only as their actual condition justifies. Thus a man should not be called *Sakra* (strong), unless he actually possesses the *Sakti* (strength) which the name implies.

¹ Umāsvāti in his *bhāṣya* on 1-35 observes :—

यथार्थाभिधानं शब्दः । नामादिषु प्रसिद्धपूर्वाशब्दाद् अर्थे प्रत्ययः साम्प्रतः
सत्यु अर्थेषु असंज्ञकः समभिर्बुद्धः । अङ्गनार्थयोरेवभूत इति ॥

(Tattvārthahādigama-sūtra, p. 32)

CHAPTER II.

THE HISTORICAL PERIOD (COMMENCING FROM 453 A.D.).

THE WRITTEN RECORDS OF THE JAINAS.

27. The teachings of Mahāvira as contained in the Jaina *Āgamas* are said to have been handed down by memory for several centuries until in Vira Samvat 980 or A.D. 453, they were codified in writing by Devardhi Gaṇi,¹ otherwise known as Kṣamāśramaṇa, at a council held at Valabhi. According to this theory the authentic history of the Jaina literature commences from 453 A.D., and all that preceded that period is to be regarded as merely traditional.

SIDDHASENA DIVĀKARA (ABOUT 533 A.D.).

28. The first Jaina writer on systematic logic, during the historical period, appears to be Siddhasena Divākara. Before his time there had not perhaps existed any distinct treatise on Jaina logic, its principles having been included in the works on metaphysics and religion. It was he who for the first time laid the foundation of a science called Logic (*Nyāya*) among the Jainas by compiling a treatise called *Nyāyāvatāra*² in 32 short stanzas.

¹ Vide Dr. Klatt's *Pattāvali* of the Kharataragaccha in the Indian Antiquary, Sept. 1882, Vol. XI, p. 247; and Dr. Jacobi's *Kalpasūtra*, Introduction, p. 15. See also Vinaya Vijaya Gaṇi's commentary on the *Kalpasūtra* which quotes the following text :—

बलहिपुरंमि नयरे ।

देवकि पमृद सयलसंवेदि ।

पुत्रे आत्मन लिङ्गि ।

नवसय असी आमु बीराउ ॥ १ ॥

(Sukhabodhikā Tīkā to *Kalpasūtra*, p. 433, printed in Kathiwar by Hira Lal Harisarāja.)

In Devardhi Gaṇi's redaction of the *Kalpasūtra* (vide Dr. Jacobi's edition of the *Kalpasūtra*, p. 67) we read :—

Samaṇassa bhagavao Mahāvīrassa jāva savva-dukkha-ppahīnassa navavāsasayāim vikkamtaim dasanassa ya vāsa-sayassa, ayaṃ aśī ime sarīvaacchare kāle gacchai iti (148).

² Vide No. 741 in the list of MSS. purchased for the Bombay Government as noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report, p. 289. A manuscript of the *Nyāyāvatāra* with *Vivṛti* was procured for me from Bhavanagara, Bombay, by Muni Dharmavijaya and his pupil Śrī Indravijaya.

29. Siddhasena Divākara is also the famous author of the *Sammatitarka-sūtra* which is a work in Prākṛta on general philosophy containing an elaborate discussion on the principles of logic. This author, who belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect, has been mentioned by Pradyumna Sūri (q.v.) in his *Vicāra-sāra-prakarāṇa*¹ and by Jina Sena Sūri in the *Adipurāṇa* dated 783 A.D.

30. Siddhasena Divākara, who was a pupil of Vṛddha-vādisūri, received the name of Kumuda-candra² at the time of ordination. He is said to have split, by the efficacy of his prayers, the Linga, the Brāhmaṇical symbol of Rudra, in the temple of Mahākālā at Ujjayinī, and to have called forth an image of Pārśvanātha by reciting his Kalyāṇa-mandira-stava. He is believed by Jainas to have converted Vikramāditya to Jainism 470 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvira, that is, in 57 B.C.³

31. But Vikramāditya of Ujjainī does not seem to be so old as he has been identified by scholars with Yaśodharma Deva, king of Malva, who, on the authority of Alberuni, defeated the Huns at Korur in 533 A.D. This view of scholars agrees well with the statement of the Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang, who, coming to India in 629 A.D., says that a very powerful king, presumably Vikramāditya, reigned at Ujjainī 60 years before his arrival there.⁴ Moreover, Varāhamihira, who was one of the nine Gems at the court of Vikramāditya, is known to have lived between 505 A.D. and 587 A.D.⁵ It is therefore very probable that

१ पंचेन य वरिसस्य सिद्धसेनदिव्यायो य जयपयङ्गो ।

वसस्य वीसद्वि सङ्गुल सञ्चारविशेषः ॥ २९ ॥

(*Vicāra-sāra-prakarāṇa*, noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, p. 272.)

² Cf. *Prabhāvakacaritra* VIII, V. 57.

³ For other particulars about Siddhasena Divākara see Dr. Klatt's *Paṭṭāvali* of the *Kharataragaccha* in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 247. *Vide* also Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's report on *Sanskrit MSS.*, during 1883-84, pp. 118, 140. Also the *Prabandha-cintāmaṇi* translated by Mr. Tawney in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series of Calcutta, pp. 10-14.

⁴ *Vide* Beal's *Buddhist Records*, Vol. II, p. 261.

⁵ Varāhamihira chose Śaka 427 or A.D. 505 as the initial year of his astronomical calculation, showing thereby that he lived about that time :

सप्तमि वेदसंज्ञं शककालमपास्य चैवशुक्लादौ ।

वर्षाद्वमिते भागौ यवनपुरे सोम्य दिवसादौ ॥ ८ ॥

Pañcasiddhāntikā, chap. 1, edited by Dr. G. Thibaut and Śudhākara Dvi-vedi.

Vide also Dr. Thibaut's Introduction to the *Pañcasiddhāntikā*, p. xxx.

Vikramāditya and his contemporary Siddhasena Divākara lived at Ujjaini about 533 A.D. I am inclined to believe that Siddhasena was no other than *Kṣapaṇaka*¹ (a Jaina sage) who is traditionally known to the Hindus to have been one of the nine Gems that adorned the court of Vikramāditya.

32. The *Nyāyāvātāra* written in Sanskrit verse gives an exposition of the doctrine of *Pramāṇa* (sources of valid knowledge) and *Naya* (the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints).

33. *Pramāṇa* is valid knowledge which illumines itself as well as other things without any obstruction. *Pramāṇa* or valid knowledge. Perception. It is of two kinds : (1) direct valid knowledge or perception (*Pratyakṣa*) and (2) indirect valid knowledge (*Parokṣa*). Direct valid knowledge (*Pratyakṣa*) is two-fold : (1) practical (*Vyāvahārika*) which is the knowledge acquired by the soul through the five senses (the eye, ear, nose, tongue and touch) and the mind (*Manas*), and (2) transcendental (*Pāramārthika*) which is the infinite knowledge that comes from the perfect enlightenment of the soul : it is called *Kevala* or absolute knowledge.

34. Indirect valid knowledge (*Parokṣa*) is also of two kinds : (1) inference (*Anumāna*) and (2) verbal testimony (*Sābda*). Verbal testimony is the knowledge derived from the words of reliable persons including knowledge from scripture. Suppose a young man coming to the side of a river cannot ascertain whether the river is fordable or not, and immediately an old experienced man of the locality, who has no enmity against him, comes and tells him the river is easily fordable : the word of the old man

¹ The nine Gems are :—

धन्वन्तरिः क्षपणकोऽमरचिंदः शङ्खुः
वैतालभट्ट चटुर्धर कालिदासः ।
ख्यातो वराहमिहिरो नृपतेः सभायां
रत्नानि वै वरदचि नव विज्ञानस्य ॥

(Jyotirvidābharaṇa).

In the *Pañcatantra* and other Brahmanic Sanskrit works as well as in the *Avadānakalpalatā* and other Buddhist Sanskrit works the Jaina ascetics are nicknamed as *Kṣapaṇaka* :

भगवद्भाषितं तत्तु क्षुभद्रेण निवेदितम् ।
श्रुत्वा क्षपणकः क्षिप्रमभूद द्वेषविषाकुलः ॥ ९ ॥
तस्य सर्वज्ञतां वेत्ति क्षुभद्वो यदि मङ्गिरा ।
तदेव क्षपणक्यां त्यज्यति अनयादरात् ॥ १२ ॥

(*Avadānakalpalatā*, *Jyotiṣkāvadāna*).

is to be accepted as a source of valid knowledge called personal testimony or *Laukika Sābda*. Scripture is also a source of valid knowledge for it lays down injunctions on matters which baffle perception and inference : for instance, it teaches that misery is the consequence of vice. Knowledge derived from this source is called scriptural testimony or *Sāstraja Sābda*. *Scripture* is defined as that which was first cognised by a competent person, which is not such as to be passed over by others, which is not incompatible with the truths derived from perception, which imparts true instruction and which is profitable to all men and is preventive of the evil path.¹

35. Inference (*Anumāna*) is the correct knowledge of the major term (*Sādhyā*) derived through the middle term (*Hetu*, reason, or *Liṅga*, sign) which is inseparably connected with it. It is of two kinds : (1) inference for one's own self (*Svārthānumāna*) and (2) inference for the sake of others (*Parārthānumāna*).

36. The first kind is the inference deduced in one's own mind after having made repeated observations. A man by repeated observations in the kitchen and elsewhere forms the conclusion in his mind that fire must always be an antecedent of smoke. Afterwards, he is not certain whether a hill which he sees has fire on it or not. But, noticing smoke, he at once brings to mind the inseparable connection between fire and smoke, and concludes that there must be fire on the hill. This is the inference for one's own self.

37. If the inference is communicated to others through words, it is called an inference for the sake of others. A type of this kind of inference is as follows :—

- (1) The *hill* (minor term or *Pakṣa*) is full of *fire* (major term or *Sādhyā*) ;
- (2) because it is full of *smoke* (middle term or *Hetu*) ;
- (3) whatever is full of smoke is full of fire, as, e.g., a *kitchen* (example or *Dṛṣṭānta*) ;
- (4) so is this hill full of smoke (application or *Upanaya*) ;
- (5) therefore this hill is full of fire (conclusion or *Nigamāna*).

38. In a proposition the subject is the minor term (*Pakṣa*) and the predicate the major term (*Sādhyā*). The minor term is that with which the connection of the major term is to be shown : In the proposition

¹ आत्मोपशमनमज्ञानदृष्टेर्विरोधकम् ।

नन्वापदेशकं सार्वं शास्त्रं कापथवद्वन् ॥

(Verse 9, Nyāyāvātāra).

"the hill is full of fire," the *hill* is the minor term and *fire* major term. The middle term (*Hetu*) is defined as that which cannot occur otherwise than in connection with the major term. Thus in the proposition: "the hill is full of fire because it is full of smoke," *smoke* is the middle term which cannot arise from any other thing than fire which is the major term. The example (*Dṛṣṭānta*) is a familiar case which assures the connection between the major term and the middle term: It is of two kinds: (1) homogeneous (*Sādharmya*), such as "the hill is full of fire because it is full of smoke, as a *kitchen*," and (2) heterogeneous (*Vaidharmya*) which assures the connection between the middle term and major term by contrariety, that is, by showing that the absence of the major term is attended by the absence of the middle term, such as "where there is no fire there is no smoke as in a *lake*."

39. In an inference for the sake of others the minor term (*Pakṣa*) must be explicitly set forth, otherwise the reasoning might be misunderstood by the opponent, *e.g.* This hill has fire because it has smoke.

This instance, if the minor term is omitted, will assume the following form:—

Having fire, | Because having smoke.

Here the opponent might not at once recollect any instance in which fire and smoke exist in union, and might mistake a lake for such an instance. In such a case the whole reasoning will be misunderstood.

40. If that of which the major term or predicate is affirmed is opposed by evidence, the public opinion, one's own statement, etc., we have that which is known as the fallacy of the minor term (*Pakṣābhāsa*) of which there are many varieties.

The semblance or fallacy of the minor term (*Pakṣābhāsa*) arises when one attributes to it as a proved fact that which is yet to be proved, or which is incapable of being proved, or when it is opposed to perception and inference, or inconsistent with the public opinion or incongruous with one's own statement, thus:—

(1) "The jar is animate (*paudgalika*)"—this is a conclusion which is yet to be proved to the opponent.

(2) "Every thing is momentary"—this is a Saugata conclusion which, according to the Jainas, is incapable of being proved.

(3) "The general (*sāmānya*) and particular (*viśeṣa*) things are without parts, are distinct from each other and are like themselves alone"—this is opposed to perception.

(4) "There is no omniscient being"—this is, according to the Jains, opposed to inference.

(5) "The sister is to be taken as wife"—this is inconsistent with the public opinion.

(6) "All things are non-existent"—this is incongruous with one's own statement.

41. Inseparable connection (*Vyāpti*) is the invariable accompaniment of the middle term by the major term. In the inference: "this hill is full of fire, because it is full of smoke," the connection between fire and smoke, that is, the invariable presence of fire with smoke, is called *Vyāpti* or Inseparable Connection. It is of two kinds: (1) Intrinsic and (2) Extrinsic.

42. Intrinsic inseparable connection (*Antar-vyāpti*) occurs when the minor term (*pakṣa*) itself as the common abode of the middle term (*hetu*) and major term (*sādhya*) shows the inseparable connection between them, thus:—

(1) This hill (minor term) is full of *fire* (major term):

(2) because it is full of *smoke* (middle term).

Here the inseparable connection between fire and smoke is shown by the hill (minor term) in which both of them abide.

43. Extrinsic inseparable connection (*Bahir-vyāpti*) occurs when an example (*dṛṣṭānta*) from the outside is introduced as the common abode of the middle term (*hetu*) and major term (*sādhya*) to assure the inseparable connection between them, thus:—

(1) This hill is full of *fire* (major term);

(2) because it is full of *smoke* (middle term);

(3) as a *kitchen* (example).

Here the reference to the kitchen is no essential part of the inference: but is introduced from without as a common instance of a place in which fire and smoke exist together, and so it re-affirms the inseparable connection between them.

44. Some logicians hold that, that which is to be proved, that is, the major term (*sādhya*), can be established by intrinsic inseparable connection (*Antarvyāpti*) only: hence the extrinsic inseparable connection (*Bahir-vyāpti*) is superfluous.

45. The semblance of reason or fallacy of the middle term (*Het-vābhāsa*) arises from doubt, misconception or non-conception about it (the middle term). It is of three kinds:—

(1) The unproved (*Asiddha*): This is fragrant because it is a sky-lotus.

Here the reason (middle term), viz., the sky-lotus, is unreal.

(2) The contradictory (*Viruddha*): "This is fiery because it is a body of water."

Here the reason alleged is opposed to what is to be established.

(3) The uncertain (*Anaikāntika*): "Sound is eternal because it is always audible."

Here the reason or middle term is uncertain because audibility may or may not be a proof of eternity.

46. The fallacy of example (*Dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*) may arise in the homogeneous or heterogeneous form from a defect in the middle term (*hetu*) or major term (*sādhya*) or both; or from doubt about them.

47. Fallacies of the homogeneous example (*Sādharmya-dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*) are as follows:—

(1) Inference is *invalid* (major term), because it is a *source of knowledge* (middle term), like *perception* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves a defect in the major term (*sādhya*), for perception is not invalid.

(2) Perception is *invalid* (major term), because it is a *source of valid knowledge* (middle term), like a *dream* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves a defect in the middle term (*hetu*), for the dream is not a source of valid knowledge.

(3) The omniscient being is not *existent* (major term), because he is not *apprehended by the senses* (middle term), like a *jar* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves a defect in both the major and middle terms (*sādhya* and *hetu*), for the jar is both existent and apprehended by the senses.

(4) This person is *devoid of passions* (major term), because he is *mortal* (middle term), like the *man in the street* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of the major term, for it is doubtful whether the man in the street is devoid of passions.

(5) This person is *mortal* (major term), because he is *full of passions* (middle term), like the *man in the street* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of the middle term, for it is doubtful, whether the man in the street is devoid of passions.

(6) This person is *non-omniscient* (major term), because he is *full of passions* (middle term), like the *man in the street* (homogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of both the major and middle terms, for it is doubtful whether the man in the street is full of passions and non-omniscient.

It is stated in the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti that some unnecessarily lay down three other kinds of fallacy of the homogeneous example (*Sādharmya-dr̥ṣṭāntābhāsa*), viz. :—

(1) Unconnected (*Ananyanya*), such as: This person is *full of passions*

(major term), because he is a *speaker* (middle term), like a *certain man in Magadha* (example).

Here though a certain man in Magadha is both a speaker and full of passions, yet there is no inseparable connection between "being a speaker" and "being full of passions."

(2) Of connection unshown (*Apradarśitānvaya*), such as :—

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term), as a jar (example).

Here though there is an inseparable connection between "produced" and "non-eternal," yet it has not been shown in the proper form as :—

"Whatever is produced is non-eternal as a jar."

(3) Of inverted connection (*Viparītānvaya*), such as :—

Sound is non-eternal (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term).

Here if the inseparable connection (*vyāpti*) is shown thus—

"Whatever is non-eternal is produced as a jar," instead of—

"Whatever is produced is non-eternal as a jar," the example would involve the fallacy of inverted connection.

48. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example (*Vaidharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa*) are of six kinds, thus :—

(1) Inference is *invalid* (major term), because it is a *source of knowledge* (middle term): whatever is not invalid is not a source of knowledge, as a *dream* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a defect in the major term (*sādhya*) for the dream is really invalid though it has been cited as not invalid.

(2) Perception is *non-reflective* or *nirvikalpaka* (major term), because it is a *source of knowledge* (middle term): whatever is reflective or *savikalpaka*, is not a source of knowledge, as *inference* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a defect in the middle term (*sādhana*), for inference is really a source of knowledge though it has been cited as not such.

(3) Sound is eternal and *non-eternal* (major term), because it is an *existence* (middle term): whatever is not eternal and non-eternal is not an existence, as a jar (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a defect in both the major and middle terms (*sādhya* and *sādhana*), for the jar is both "eternal and non-eternal" and "an existence."

(4) Kapila is not *omniscient* (major term), because he is not a *propounder of the four noble truths* (middle term): whoever is omniscient is the propounder of the four noble truths, as *Buddha* (the heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves in the heterogeneous form a doubt as to the validity of the major term (*sādhya*), for it is doubtful whether Buddha was omniscient.

(5) This person is *untrustworthy* (major term), because he is *full of passions* (middle term): whoever is trustworthy is not full of passions, as *Buddha* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of the

middle term (*hetu*), for it is doubtful whether Buddha is not full of passions.

(6) Kapila is not devoid of *passions* (major term), because he did not give his own flesh to the hungry (middle term): whoever is devoid of passions did give his own flesh to the hungry, as *Buddha* (heterogeneous example).

Here the example involves doubt as to the validity of both the major and middle terms (*sādhya* and *sādhana*), for it is doubtful whether Buddha was devoid of passions and gave his own flesh to the hungry.

It is stated in the *Nyāyavatāra-vivṛti* that some unnecessarily lay down three other kinds of fallacy of the heterogeneous example (*Vaidharmya-drūṭāntābhāsa*), viz.—

(1) Unseparated (*Avyatiṛeki*): This person is not devoid of *passions* (major term), because he is a *speaker* (middle term): whoever is devoid of passions is not a speaker, as a *piece of stone* (heterogeneous example).

Here though a piece of stone is both “devoid of passions” and “not a speaker,” yet there is no invariable separation (*vyatiṛeka vyāpti*) between “devoid of passions” and “a speaker.”

(2) Of separation unshown (*Apradarūṭavyatiṛeka*):

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term); as ether (example).

Here though there is an invariable separation between “*produced*” and “*eternal*,” yet it has not been shown in the proper form, such as: “Whatever is non-non-eternal is not produced, e.g., ether.”

(3) Of contrary separation (*Viparīta-vyatiṛeka*):

Sound is *non-eternal* (major term), because it is *produced* (middle term): whatever is not produced is non-non-eternal, e.g., ether (example).

Here the example has been put in a contrary way, for the proper form should have been: Whatever is non-non-eternal is not produced, e.g., ether.”

49. Refutation (*Dūṣaṇa*) is the pointing out of defects or fallacies in the statements of the opponent in any of the forms enumerated above. The semblance of a refutation (*Dūṣaṇābhāsa*) is the contrivance to allege defects where there are no defects at all.

50. The immediate effect of *Pramāṇa* (valid knowledge) is the removal of ignorance. The consequence of the transcendental perception (*Pāramārthika Pratyakṣa Pramāṇa*) is bliss and equanimity consisting in salvation (*Mokṣa* or final emancipation), while that of the other kinds of *Pramāṇa* (direct and indirect knowledge) is the facility which they afford us to choose the desirable and reject the undesirable things.

51. *Naya* is the method of comprehending things from particular

Naya or the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints. Thus we may conceive rose either as a flower possessing the attributes common to all flowers or as a thing possessing attributes which are peculiar to the rose as distinguished from other flowers. The *Naya* is of seven kinds: *naigama*, *saṁgraha*, *vyavahāra*, *rjūsūtra*, *śabda*, *samabhirūḍha*, and *evambhūta*.

mentary on Umāsvāti's Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra called *Gandha-hasti-mahābhāṣya*. The introductory part of this commentary is called *Devāgamastotra*¹ or *Āptamīmāṃsā*, and is replete with discussions of logical principles besides a review of the contemporary schools of philosophy including the Advaita Vāda.² The *Āptamīmāṃsā* has been cited by the Hindu philosopher Vācaspati Miśra³ in explaining Śaṅkarācārya's criticism of the Syādvāda doctrine in the Vedānta-sūtra.

55. Samantabhadra, who was styled a Kavi and whose works were commented on by Vidyānanda⁴ and Prabhācandra, was also the author of the *Yuktyanuśāsana*, the *Ratnakaraṇḍaka* (also called *Upāsakādhyaṇa*), the *Svayambhū-stotra*, and the *Caturvīm-*

who flourished 980 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Mahāvīra. *Vide* also *Uvā-sagadasāo* edited by A. F. R. Hoernle, Appendix III, page 50.

¹ In the *Pāṇḍavapurāṇa* he is extolled as the author of the *Devāgamastotra* :—

समन्तभद्रो भद्रार्थो मातु भारतभूषणः

देवागमेन येनाय ज्ञानो देवागमः क्षतः ॥

(*Pāṇḍavapurāṇa*, noticed in Peterson's 4th Report, p. 157.)

² अद्वैतैकान्तपक्षेऽपि ह्यहो भेदो विचक्ष्यते ।

कारकाणां त्रयायाश्च नैकं ज्ञानात् प्रजायते ॥ १४ ॥

(*Āptamīmāṃsā*, verse 24.)

³ Vācaspati Miśra in his *Bhāmatī-ṭīkā* on Śaṅkara's exposition of the *Vedānta Sūtra* 2-2-33 quotes the following verse :—

साक्षाद् सर्वथैकान्त्यागात् किं ह्यविशिष्टधेः ।

सप्रभङ्गनयायैव ज्ञेयादेष विशेषकत् ॥

(*Bhāmatī*, Bibliotheca Indica, p. 458.)

The same verse occurs in the *Āptamīmāṃsā* as follows :—

साक्षाद् सर्वथैकान्त्यागात् किं ह्यविशिष्टधेः ।

सप्रभङ्गनयायैव ज्ञेयादेष विशेषकः ॥ १०४ ॥

(MSS. of the *Āptamīmāṃsā*, verse 104, borrowed from Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur.)

Vidyānanda at the closing part of his commentary on the *Āptamīmāṃsā* (called *Āpta-mīmāṃsālaṅkāṭī-ṭīkā aṣṭasāhasrī*) refers to Samantabhadra thus :—

येनाशेषकुनीतिहृत्तिस्तरितः प्रज्ञावतां शीघ्रिनाः

सहायेऽयकलकुनीतिविराजन्नाथेयार्थद्युतः ।

स श्रौत्स्मि समन्तभद्र यतिवत् सुयाद् विभुर्भागुमान्

विद्यानन्दफलप्रदो जगत्प्रियां साक्षादनागमिणीः ॥

(Folio 218, *Āptamīmāṃsālaṅkāṭī-ṭīkā*, Govt. Collection, in the Asiatic Society of Bengal, No. 1525.)

śati-jina-stuti. He is mentioned by Jina Sena in the Ādipurāṇa composed about 838 A.D., and is referred to by the Hindu philosopher Kumārila.¹ Kumārila, a contemporary of the Buddhist logician Dharmakīrti, is generally held to have lived in the 7th century A.D. Samantabhadra is supposed to have flourished about 600 A.D.

56. The Āpta-mīmāṃsā consists of 115 stanzas in Sanskrit, divided into ten chapters called *Paricehedas*, in the course of which a full exposition of the seven parts of the *Syād-vāda* or *Sapta-bhaṅgī-naya* has been given. The first and second parts of the doctrine, viz., *Syād-asti* ("may be, it is"), and *Syād-nāsti* ("may be, it is not"), have led to most interesting discussion of the relation between *asti*, that is, *bhāva* or existence, and *nāsti*, that is, *abhāva* or non-existence.

57. Non-existence (*Abhāva*) is divided into four kinds : (1) antecedent non-existence (*prāgabhāva*), e.g., a lump of clay becomes non-existent as soon as a jar is made out of it, so the jar is an antecedent non-existence with reference to the lump of clay ; (2) subsequent non-existence (*pradhvaṃsābhāva*), e.g., the lump of clay is a subsequent non-existence with reference to the jar ; (3) mutual non-existence (*anyonyābhāva* or *anyāpoha*), e.g., a jar and a post are mutually non-existent with reference to each other ; and (4) absolute non-existence (*samavāyābhāva* or *atyantābhāva*), e.g., the inanimate is not a living object. It is observed² that on the supposition of mere existence to the entire exclusion of non-existence, things become all-pervading, beginningless, endless, indistinguishable and inconceivable. For

Prabhācandra in his commentary on the Ratnakaraṇḍaka (or Upāsakādhvayana) observes :—

येनाज्ञानतमो विनाश निश्चितं भवत्यचेतोमतं
सम्यग्ज्ञानमहाशुभिः प्रकटितः सामारमार्गोऽविच्छिन्नः ।
स शीतलकरव्यकामसरविः संक्षुत्तुरिच्छोपको
जौयादेव समकमभद्रमुनिषः शीमत्प्रभेन्दुर्जिनः ॥

(Upāsakādhvayana with the commentary of Prabhācandra noticed in Peterson's 4th Report, pp. 137-38.)

¹ Vide Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, p. 118, and J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 227.

² भावैकानो पदार्थानामभावानामपञ्चवात् ।
सर्वात्मकमनाद्यत्मसंरूपमभावकम् ॥ ८ ॥
कार्यद्वयमनादि स्यात् प्रागभावस्य निश्चये ।
प्रध्वंसस्य च ध्वंसस्य प्रत्ययेऽनन्ततां व्रजेत् ॥ १० ॥
सर्वात्मकं तदेकं स्यादन्यापेक्षव्यतिरिक्ते ।
अन्यत्र समवायेन अपदेत्येत सर्वथा ॥ ११ ॥

instance, if the antecedent non-existence is denied, action and substance are to be supposed as beginningless, while on the denial of the subsequent non-existence, they become endless, and in the absence of mutual non-existence they become one and all-pervading, while on absolute non-existence being denied they are to be supposed as existing always and everywhere.

58. In the same way on the supposition of mere non-existence to the entire exclusion of existence, it becomes impossible to establish or reject anything (since it is non-existent). If on the other hand existence and non-existence, which are incompatible with each other, are simultaneously ascribed to a thing, it becomes indescribable. Therefore the truth is as follows :—

- (1) A thing *is* existent—from a certain point of view
- (2) It *is non-existent*—from another point of view.
- (3) It *is both* existent and non-existent *in turn*—from a third point of view.
- (4) It *is indescribable* (that is, both existent and non-existent simultaneously)—from a fourth point of view.
- (5) It *is* existent and *indescribable*—from a fifth point of view.
- (6) It *is non-existent* and *indescribable*—from a sixth point of view.
- (7) It *is both* existent and non-existent and *indescribable*—from a seventh point of view.

AKALAṆKADEVA (ABOUT 750 A.D.).

59. Akalaṅka, otherwise known as Akalaṅkadeva or Akalāṅka-candra, was a famous logician who belonged to the Digambara sect. He was designated as a *Kavi*¹ (poet)—a title of special honour given to writers of repute. He wrote a commentary on Samantabhadra's *Āptamīmāṃsā* called *Aṣṭa śatī*² which is a

अभावेकान्तपक्षेऽपि भावापन्धववादिनाम् ।

अवोधवाक्यप्रमाणं न केन साधनदूषणम् ॥ ११ ॥

विराधाज्ञोभयैकार्थं स्याद्वादव्याय विद्विषाम् ।

अवाच्यतैकान्तेऽप्यङ्गिर्नावाच्यमिति युज्यते ॥ १२ ॥

कथंचित् सदेवेष्टं कथंचिदसदेव तत् ।

तथैवमवाच्यं च उपवीगान्न सर्वथा ॥ १३ ॥

(*Āptamīmāṃsā*, MSS., verses 9-14,
lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya
of Jaipur.)

¹ For an explanation of the term "Kavi" vide R. G. Bhandarkar's Report on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, page 122.

² A manuscript of the *Aṣṭa-śatī* was kindly supplied to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur early in 1907.

most precious work on the Jaina philosophy dealing mainly with logic. Mānikyanandi's Parikṣāmukha-sūtra (q.v.) was based on another work on logic, called Nyāya-viniścaya, written by Akalaṅka, to whom the following works are also attributed: Laghiyastraya, Akalaṅka-stotra, Svarūpa-sambodhana and Prāyaścitta. Laghusamantabhadra¹ in his Aṣṭa-sāhasrī-*viśama-pada-tātparyā-ṭikā* calls Akalaṅka as *Sakala-tārṅkika-cakra-cūḍā-maṇi* or "the crest-gem of all logicians."

60. In the Pāṇḍava-purāṇa² reference is made to a legend according to which Akalaṅka was embarrassed in a controversy with a Buddhist antagonist. Finding that the antagonist was effectively prompted by Māyādevī concealed in a jar, Akalaṅka is said to have put an end to that prompting or inspiration by kicking the jar over with his foot.

61. Akalaṅka, though mentioned along with Dharmakīrti³ as a logician, flourished at a considerably later time. He is held to have been a contemporary of Rāṣṭrakūṭa king Subhatuṅga⁴ or Kṛṣṇarāja I. As Kṛṣṇa-rāja's son, Govind II, lived in Śaka 705⁵ or 783 A.D., Kṛṣṇa-rāja I, and consequently his contemporary Akalaṅka, must have flourished about 750 A.D.

VIDYĀNANDA (ABOUT 800 A.D.).

62. Vidyānanda, mentioned by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya,⁶ was a Digambara logician of Pāṭaliputra. He was the author of the *Āpta-mīmāṃsālaṅkāṭī*, otherwise called *Aṣṭasāhasrī*, an exhaustive sub-commentary on the *Āpta*.

¹ Vide Aṣṭasāhasrī-*viśama-pada-tātparyā-ṭikā* by Laghusamanta-bhadra, noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report, p. 217.

² अकलङ्कोऽकलङ्कः स कलौ कलयतु युनम् ।

पादेन ताडिता येन मायादेवौ घटश्छिन्ना ॥

(Pāṇḍavapurāṇa, noticed by Peterson in his 4th Report, p. 157.)

³ वाचकमुच्चरितानि सकलशास्त्रज्ञानविद्वत्तानि तच्चायंनुवाचीति यद्येवमकलङ्कधर्मकौर्वादिवत् प्रकरणमेव किं नारभ्यते किमनया सूत्रकारमाद्योपुष-
षिकया ।

(Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā, by Hemacandra, noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report, p. 148.)

⁴ Vide K. B. Pathak's article on "Bhartṛhari and Kumārila" in the Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, Vol. XVIII, 1892.

⁵ Vide R. G. Bhandarkar's "Early History of the Deccan," 2nd edition, p. 78.

⁶ Vide the chapter on the Jaina system in the *Sarva-darśana-samgraha* translated by Cowell and Gough, p. 56.

mīmāṃsā, containing an elaborate exposition of various logical principles. Vidyānanda, in the opening and the closing lines of his Aṣṭasāhasrī,¹ makes an indirect reference to Samantabhadra and Akalaṅka respectively, while in chapter X of the work he distinctly says that he followed the Aṣṭasāti of Akalaṅka in explaining the Āptamīmāṃsā. Another logical treatise called Pramāṇa-parikṣā is also attributed to him. He was also the author of the Śloka-vārtika and Āpta-parikṣā.

63. He has, in his Aṣṭasāhasrī, criticised the doctrines of the Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Vaiśeṣika, Advaita, Mīmāṃsaka and Saugata, Tāthāgata or Bauddha philosophy; and has also mentioned Dignāga, Udyotakara, Dharmakīrti,² Prajñākara,³ Bhartṛhari,⁴ Śābarasvāmī, Prabhākara and Kumārila. Vidyānanda was

1 The opening lines of the Aṣṭa-sāhasrī are :—

जीवहंसानमभिवन्द्य समन्तभद्रमुद्भूतबोधमहिमानमनिन्द्यवाचम् ।
शास्त्रावताररचितस्तुतिगोचराग्रमोमांसितं कृतिरलंक्रियते मयाहम् ॥ १ ॥

The closing lines of the Aṣṭasāhasrī are :—

जीमदकलङ्कमश्वरकुल विद्यानन्दसकला भूयान् ।
मयमोमांसालंकृतिरहसाचक्षी सतामहो ॥

The lines in Chapter X referred to run thus :—

जीमदकलङ्कविहतां समन्तभद्रोक्तिमव संक्षेपात् ।
परमागमार्थविषयमहसाहस्यं प्रकाशयति ॥

(Aṣṭasāhasrī, MSS., Asiatic Society of Bengal.)

2 यदुक्तं धर्मकौत्तिना :—

अतद्रूप पराहत वस्तुमात्रं प्रवेदनात् ।
सामान्यविषयस्योक्तं लिङ्गभेदाप्रतिष्ठिते ।

(Quoted in Aṣṭasāhasrī, chap. I.)

अर्थोपयोगेऽपि पुनः स्मार्त्तं शब्दानुयोजनम् ।
अवधीर्यस्येतेन सोऽर्थो व्यवहितो भवेत् ।

(Quoted in Aṣṭasāhasrī, chap. I.)

प्रज्ञाकरस्येदं वचः :—

क्रमप्रतीतिरेवं स्यात् प्रथमभाषणा मतिः ।
मत्यामर्ष्यात् पुनः पश्चाद् यतः कर्ता प्रतीत्यते ॥

(Quoted in Aṣṭasāhasrī, chap. I.)

न सोऽस्ति प्रत्ययो लोके यः शब्दानुगमादते ।
अनपिबन्निवाभाति सर्वं शब्दे प्रतिष्ठितम् ॥

(This verse of Vākyapadiya by Bhartṛhari is quoted in the Aṣṭasāhasrī, vide J.B.B.R.A.S. for 1892, p. 221.)

otherwise named Pātra Kesari or Pātra Kesari Svāmi who has been praised by Jina Sena in the Ādi Purāṇa¹ composed about Saka 760² or A.D. 838. He is believed to have lived early in the 9th century A.D.³ at Pāṭaliputra.⁴

MĀṆIKYA NANDI (ABOUT 800 A.D.).

64. Māṇikya Nandi was a Digambara author, whose Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra⁵ or Parikṣā-mukha-sūtra is a standard work on the Jaina logic. As his work is based on that of Akalanka,⁶ he must have lived after 750 A.D. The earliest commentary on the Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra is the Prameya-kamala-martanda of Prabhācandra. Vidyānanda, Māṇikya Nandi and Prabhācandra have been pronounced to be contemporaries.⁷ So Māṇikya Nandi seems to have lived about 800 A.D.

65. The Parikṣā-mukha-sūtra is divided into six chapters thus: (1) the characteristic of valid knowledge (*Pramāṇa-svarūpa*); (2) direct apprehension or perception (*Pratyakṣa*); (3) indirect apprehension (*Parokṣa*); (4) the object of valid knowledge (*Viśaya*); (5) the result of valid knowledge (*Phala*); (6) the semblances or fallacies (*Ābhāsa*).

¹ भट्टकलङ्क ओपास पात्रकेसरिणां गुहाः ।

विदुषां हृदयाकटा दारायकोत्तिनिर्गताः ॥ ५२ ॥

(Ādipurāṇa, quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak, J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 222.)

Mr. Pathak has quoted Samyaktvaprakāśa to show that Vidyānanda and Pātrakesari were identical:—

तथा लोकवार्तिके विद्यानन्दपरनाम पात्रकेसरिस्त्वामिना यदुक्तं तच्च लिख्यते तच्चायं ऋद्धानं सम्यग्दर्शनम् ।

(J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, pp. 222, 223.)

^{2,3} Vide K. B. Pathak's article on Bhartṛhari and Kumārila in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, pp. 227, 229.

⁴ Vide Brahma-nemidatta's Kathākośa, life of Pātrakesari *alias* Vidyānanda.

⁵ A manuscript of the Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra was kindly lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur (Rajputana), and subsequently another manuscript of the work was procured from the Deccan College, Poona.

⁶ Peterson in his 4th Report, p. 155, notices Parikṣā-mukhaṁ satikam. The Tīkā is the Prameya-ratna-mālā or Parikṣā-mukhapañjikā of Ananta-vīrya, which opens thus:

चक्रलङ्कवचोऽभोधेवदधे येन धीमता ।

न्यायविद्याद्वतं तस्मै नमो माणिक्यनन्दिने ॥ १ ॥

⁷ Vide K. B. Pathak's article on Bhartṛhari and Kumārila in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, pp. 219, 220, 221. Mr. Pathak says that Māṇikya Nandi has mentioned Vidyānanda, but in the text of the Parikṣā-mukha-śāstra itself I have not come across any such mention.

66. *Pramāṇa*, valid knowledge, is defined as the knowledge

Valid knowledge. which ascertains the nature of what was uncertain to one's self. It generally arises in the form : " I know the jar by myself," which consists of a subject, an object, an act, and an instrument. Just as a lamp illumines itself as well as the surrounding objects, so the *Pramāṇa* sets forth the knower as well as the thing known.

67. *Pramāṇa* is of two kinds : (1) direct knowledge (*Pratyakṣa*) which arises through the senses, etc., and (2) indirect knowledge (*Parokṣa*) consisting of recollection (*Smṛti*), recognition (*Pratyabhijñāna*), argumentation (*Tarka* or *Ūha*), inference (*Anumāna*), and the scripture (*Āgama*). Recollection is a knowledge of the form " that " which arises through

Kinds of valid knowledge. the awaking of impressions, thus : " that Devadatta." Recognition is a knowledge which arises from perception through recollection in the forms, " this is that," " this is like that," " this is different from that," " this is the counterpart of that," etc., thus : " this is that Devadatta," " the *boś gavaeus* is like the cow," " the buffalo is different from the cow," " this is far from that," " this is a tree," etc. Argumentation is a knowledge of the connection between the middle term and the major term based on the presence or absence of the latter, in the form, " if this is, that is, if this is not, that is not," thus smoke arises only if there is fire, but it cannot arise if there is no fire. Inference ¹ is the knowledge of the major term arising through the middle term : there is fire here because there is smoke.

68. Pervasion ² or inseparable connection (*Vyāpti* or *Avinābhāva*) is the universal attendance of the middle term by the major term in simultaneity or succession : thus fire and smoke may abide simultaneously or the latter may follow the former.

If the middle term and the major term exist simultaneously, the former is called *vyāpya*, pervaded or contained, and the latter *vyāpaka*, pervader or container.

But if the middle term follows the major term, the former is called effect (*kārya*), and the latter cause (*kāraṇa* or *hetu*), thus fire is the cause of smoke. Ordinarily, however, the major term is called *sādhya* or that which is to be proved, and the middle term is called *sādhana* or that by which it is to be proved. Sometimes the major term is also called *dharma* or predicate, and the middle term *liṅga*, mark or sign.

The minor term is called *Pakṣa*, the place or locus in which the major term abides, or *Dharmin*, the subject, thus : " this

¹ साधनात् साध्यविज्ञानमनुमानम् ॥ ८ ॥ (Parikṣā-mukha-sūtra).

² सद्यस्मान्भावविययोर्विनाभावः ॥ ११ ॥ (Parikṣā-mukha-sūtra).

place is fiery"; "sound is mutable": here "this place" and "sound" are the minor terms. Some philosophers, who divide the middle term (reason) into three phases, dispense with the minor term in an inference.

The middle term (*Hetu*) is defined as that which is inseparably connected with the major term, or in other words, which cannot come into existence unless the major term exists. For instance, smoke could not come into existence unless the fire existed.

69. The middle term or reason (*Hetu*) is divided as (1) perceptible (*upalabdhi*), and (2) imperceptible (*anupalabdhi*). Each of these again may occur in the form of an affirmation (*Vidhi*) or negation (*pratiśedha*).

70. The *perceptible* reason in the *affirmative* form admits of six subdivisions according as it is :—

- (i) the pervaded (*vyāpya*)—sound is mutable because it is factitious ;
- (ii) an effect (*kārya*)—this man has got intellect because there are (intellectual) functions in him ;
- (iii) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—there is a shadow here because there is an umbrella ;
- (iv) prior (*pūrva*)—the Rohiṇi stars will rise for the Kṛttikās have risen.
- (v) posterior (*uttara*)—the Bharāṇi stars certainly rose for the Kṛttikās have risen ;
- (vi) simultaneous (*sahacara*)—the man had a mother for he had a father ; or this mango has a particular colour because it has a particular flavour.

71. The *perceptible* reason in the *negative* form admits of six subdivisions as follows :—

- (i) the pervaded (*vyāpya*)—there is no cold sensation because of heat ;
- (ii) an effect (*kārya*)—there is no cold sensation because of smoke ;
- (iii) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—there is no happiness in this man because of the shaft in his heart ;
- (iv) prior (*pūrva*)—the Rohiṇi stars will not rise at once for the Revati [only] has risen.
- (v) posterior (*uttara*)—the Bharāṇi did not rise a moment ago for the Puṣyā has risen.
- (vi) simultaneous (*sahacara*)—there is no doubt of the existence of the other side of this wall for this side of it is perceived.

72. The *imperceptible* reason in the *negative* form admits of seven subdivisions as follows :—

- (i) identity (*svabhāva*)—there is no jar here because it is imperceptible ;
- (ii) the pervaded (*vyāpya*)—there is no Śimśapā here because there is no tree at all ;
- (iii) an effect (*kārya*)—there is no smouldering fire here because there is no smoke ;
- (iv) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—there is no smoke here because there is no fire ;
- (v) prior (*pūrva*)—the Rohiṇī stars will not rise in a moment for the Kṛttikās are not perceptible ;
- (vi) posterior (*utara*)—the Bharanī did not rise a moment ago for the Kṛttikās are not perceptible ;
- (vii) simultaneous (*sahacara*)—in this even balance there is no bending upwards because it is not perceptible.

73. The *imperceptible* reason in the *affirmative* form admits of three subdivisions thus :—

- (i) an effect (*kārya*)—in this man there is some disease because there is no healthy movement in him ;
- (ii) a cause (*kāraṇa*)—this man is sorrowful because he has no union with his beloved ones ;
- (iii) identity (*svabhāva*)—there is uncertainty here because certainty is not discernible ;

73. The middle term and the major term are the parts of an inference, but the example (*udāharaṇa*) is not. Nevertheless for the sake of explaining matters to men of small intellect, the example (*udāharaṇa* or *dṛṣṭānta*), nay, even the application (*upanaya*) and the conclusion (*nigamana*) are admitted as parts of an inference. The example is of two kinds : (1) the affirmative or homogeneous (*anvayi* or *sādharmya*) which shows the middle term as covered by the major term, such as : wherever there is smoke, there is fire, as in a kitchen ; and (2) the negative or heterogeneous (*vyatireki* or *vaidharmya*) by which the absence of the middle term is indicated by the absence of the major term, e.g., wherever there is no fire, there is no smoke, as in a lake.

74. Inference is of two kinds, viz., (1) inference for one's own self (*svārthānumāna*), and (2) inference for the sake of others (*parārthānumāna*). An instance of the latter kind of inference is given below :—

- (1) Sound (minor term) is mutable (major term)—proposition ;
- (2) because it is factitious (reason or middle term) ;

- (3) whatever is factitious is mutable, as a jar (affirmative or homogeneous example) ;
- (4) sound is factitious (application) ;
- (5) therefore sound is mutable (conclusion).

Or

- (3) whatever is not mutable is not factitious, as the milk of a barren woman's breast (negative or heterogeneous example) ;
- (4) but sound is factitious (application) ;
- (5) therefore sound is mutable (conclusion).

75. Testimony (*Āgama*) is a knowledge of objects derived from the words of reliable persons or scripture in virtue of their natural fitness or suggestiveness—*e.g.*, the north pole exists.

76. Objects of valid knowledge are either general (*sāmānya*) or particular (*viśeṣa*). The general is of two kinds : (1) homogeneous (*tīryak*), including many individuals of like nature as, the "cow" is a general notion which signifies many individual cows as Śabalā, Khamba, Mumbha, etc. ; and (2) heterogeneous (*ūrdhvatā*), including many individuals of dissimilar nature, as, "gold" is a general notion comprising a bracelet, necklace, ear-ring, etc. The particular is also of two kinds : (1) relating to things (*vyatireka*), *e.g.*, cow, buffalo, elephant, dog, are four particular things distinguished from one another ; and (2) relating to action such as pleasure, pain, etc., experienced by the soul.

77. The result or consequence of valid knowledge is the cessation of ignorance enabling one to choose the desirable and reject the undesirable.

78. Fallacy or semblance consists of the knowledge of that which is different from the real thing. It is of many kinds, such as the fallacy—

- (1) of perception (*pratyakṣābhāsa*), *e.g.*—to mistake a post for a man ;
- (2) of recollection (*smaraṇābhāsa*)—in trying to recollect Jinadatta to say : " O, that Devadatta " ;
- (3) of recognition (*pratyakṣijñānābhāsa*)—on seeing a greyhound to say : " this is a tiger " ;
- (4) of argumentation (*tarkābhāsa*)—" whoever is his son must be black " ;
- (5) of the minor term (*pakṣābhāsa*)—" sound is impermanent " : This is a fallacy of the minor term according to the Mimāṃsakas. for they do not attribute

impermanency to sound ; or fire is not hot because it is a substance as water ;

(6) of the middle term or reason (*hetvābhāsa*)—sound is eternal because it is factitious ;

(7) of example (*dṛṣṭāntābhāsa*)—sound is eternal because it is corporeal, like a jar ;

(8) of verbal testimony (*āgamābhāsa*)—" there is a heap of sweetmeats on the side of the river, run you boys " ; " there are a hundred elephants on his finger " ; " the Jainas are allowed to eat in the night " [as a fact they are not so allowed according to their scripture].

79. Māṇikya Nandi in the *Parikṣāmukha-sūtra* (chapter vi, aph.

References to contemporaneous systems of philosophy. 56-57) has mentioned the *Laukāyatika*, *Saugata*, *Sāṃkhya*, *Yoga*, *Prābhākara*, *Jaiminiya*, etc. In the 3rd chapter of

the work he has alluded to—" a certain philosopher who maintaining three phases of the reason or middle term (*hetu*) dispenses with the minor term (*pakṣa*)."¹

80. He concludes his work by referring to it as a mirror through which a man can see what is to be accepted and what rejected.²

PRABHĀ CANDRA (ABOUT 825 A.D.).

81. Prabhā Candra styled a *Kavi*, a member of the Digambara sect, was the author of the famous logical treatise called the *Prameya-kamala-mārtanda*, the earliest commentary on the *Parikṣāmukha-sūtra* of Māṇikya Nandi. He was also the author of the *Nyāya-kumuda-candrodaya* (or briefly *Candrodaya*), a commentary on the *Laghiyastraya* of Akalanka. He has in his *Prameya-kamala-mārtanda* mentioned *Bhagavān Upavarṣa*,

¹ माध्याविभाषितेन निश्चितो हेतुः ॥ १० ॥

को वा विधा हेतुमुक्त्वा समर्थयमानो न पश्यति ॥ ११ ॥

(*Parikṣāmukha-sūtra*, MSS. lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur).

² परीक्षासुखमादर्शं हेतोपादेयतत्त्वयोः ।

संविदे माहृत्यो वाचः परीक्षाद्वयवद् वक्ष्यामि ॥

(*Parikṣāmukha-sūtra*, chap. VI, MSS. lent to me by Mr. Jain Vaidya of Jaipur).

Śabarasvāmi, Bhārtrhari, Bāṇa,¹ Kumārila,² Prabhākara, Dig-nāga, Udyotakara Dharmakīrti, Vidyānanda and others. He himself has been mentioned by Jina Sena in the Ādi Purāṇa³ composed about Śaka 760 or A.D. 838. Prabhā Candra, as a contemporary of Maṇikya Nandi and Vidyānanda, is believed to have lived in the first half of the 9th century A.D.

MALLAVĀDIN (ABOUT 827 A.D.).

82. He belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the famous author of a commentary on the Buddhist logical treatise Nyāya-binduṭīkā called Dharmottara-ṭippanaka. According to a Jaina legend,⁴ Malla was the son of King Śilāditya's sister. He was called *vādin* or logician, because, having vanquished the Buddhists in a dispute, he re-established the Jaina faith and brought to its former glory the great figure of Ādinātha on Mount Satruñjaya (in Kathiwar).

83. A palm-leaf manuscript⁵ of the Dharmottara-ṭippanaka

¹ Prabhā Candra has quoted the following verse from Bāṇa's Kādambarī:—

एकोज्ञे जगन्नि सज्जनये
स्थितौ प्रजायां प्रसूये नमःस्युगे ।
वजाय समंस्थिति-नाम-हेतवे
वयोमयाय विमवाङ्मने नमः ॥

(Prameya-kamala-mārtanda, Deccan College, MSS., p. 21a, quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 221.)

² Prabhā Candra refers to Kumārila otherwise called Bhaṭṭa thus:—

तथा चर्चापत्तिरपि प्रमावाकर्तृ नञ्चर्चं चर्चापत्तिरपि दृष्टः भूतो वा चर्चापत्त्या
नैषपश्यते इत्येवार्थकल्पना, कुमारिलोऽपि एतदेव भाष्यकारवचो व्याचष्टे ।

(Prameya-kamala-mārtanda, quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak in the J.B. B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 227.)

³ In the Ādi Purāṇa Prabhā Candra is thus mentioned:—

चन्द्राग्रमुपयमसं प्रभाचन्द्रं कविं क्षुवे ।
क्षला चन्द्रोदयं येन मन्दादालादिनं जनम् ॥ ४० ॥

(Quoted by Mr. K. B. Pathak in J.B.B.R.A.S., for 1892, p. 222.)

On p. 227 of the same journal the date of the Ādipurāṇa is fixed at Śaka 760 or 838 A.D.

⁴ Peterson 4, pp. 3-4, in which is mentioned the legend from the Prabhacintāmaṇi (Rāmacandra's edition, Bombay, p. 273).

⁵ इति चर्चापत्तिरप्यनके जीमलवाद्याचार्येणैव दत्तोयः परिच्छेदः समाप्तः सङ्गच्छते ॥

is preserved at Anhilwad Patan and is said to be dated *Samvat* 1231 or 1174 A.D. According to the *Prabhāvaka-caritra* ¹ Mallavādin was also the author of a *Padmacaritra* and lived in *Vira Samvat* 884 or 357 A.D. But this is impossible as *Dharmottara* (q.v.), on whose *Nyāyabindutika* Mallavādin wrote *Tippanaka*, lived about 837 A.D. On the other hand Mallavādin is mentioned ² by Hem Candra Sūri who lived during 1088—1172 A.D. It seems therefore probable that the year 884 in which Mallavādin lived does not refer to *Vira Samvat*, but to *Vikrama Samvat*. On that supposition Mallavādin lived in 827 A.D. and was a contemporary of *Dharmottara*.

PRADYUMNA SŪRI (ABOUT 980 A.D.).

84. He ³ belonged to the *Rājagaccha* of the *Svetāmbara* sect. In *Māṇikyacandra's Pārśvanātha-caritra*, ⁴ his prowess in logical discussions is referred to in the following terms :—

“There was born the preceptor Pradyumna Sūri—the first healer of disease of the world—who entirely removed all corruptions from the body of men (or detected all defects in disputation committed by men) and who, using sharp logical expressions, made his irrelevant opponents to sweat and thereby to be cured of the fever of pride.”

संवत् १२३१ वर्षे भाद्रपद शुद्धि १२ रवौ अद्योऽजनावलिपाम वासव्यः ॥
दाहकुसुमम् वाचदेन धर्माय धर्मात्तर विष्णुकं लिखापितम् ॥

(Noticed in Peterson 5, App. p. 3.)

¹ Vide Klatt, Vienna Oriental Journal, Vol. IV, p. 67.

² अनु मल्लवादिनं तार्किकाः ।

तस्मादन्ये चीना इत्यर्थः ॥

(Siddha Hema Sabdānuśāsana Bṛhat
Tīkā, 2-2-39).

³ For further particulars about Pradyumna Sūri see Peterson's 4th Report, p. lxxix.

⁴ पुंसां विषयज्ञं विकारमखिलं निर्दुल्लसुखसूक्ष्म-
खवास्यः समधुदु भवानयमिषक् प्रद्युम्नस्त्रिगुणः ।
येन खेदयता प्रयुज्य तरुणां तर्काव्युत्थां भारतीं
बादीन्नाः प्रविखापिनो वनतरं दर्पणं त्वाजिताः ॥ ४ ॥
दिग्गजरसमाक्रान्तवेदपटुं समाददे ।
यः प्रत्यक्षं मरेन्द्रस्य जगतस्तद्वयः पुनः ॥ ५ ॥
नीरामतानिधी राजमन्त्रधुगुणवारिधिः ।
स्वरिः प्रद्युम्नस्त्रिगुणः पूर्वं वा पूर्वजोऽभवत् ॥ ६ ॥

85. In the same work reference is made to his victory over the Digambaras of Venkapatta in the presence of the king of that province. He delighted the kings of various countries by no fewer than eighty-four triumphs in discussion. He was eleventh in ascent from Māṇikyacandra Sūri, who wrote his Pārśvanātha-caritra in Saṃvat 1276 or 1219 A.D. Pradyumna must have flourished about 980 A.D., for he was the preceptor of Abhayadeva Sūri (q.v.) who lived a little before 1039 A.D.

ABHAYADEVA SŪRI (ABOUT 1000 A.D.).

86. Abhayadeva Sūri belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect¹ and was the pupil and successor of Pradyumna Sūri of the Rājagaccha. He was an eminent logician and author of *Vādama-hārṇava*, a treatise on logic called the Ocean of Discussions, and of a commentary on the Sammati-tarka-sūtra called *Tattvārtha-bodha-vidhāyini*.² “He is described as a lion that roamed at ease in the wild forest of books on logic. That the rivers of various conflicting opinions might not sweep away the path of

सपादसप्तगोपालविभवनगिर्यादिदेशगोपालान् ।
यथुच्चतुरधिकाशैत्या वादजयैरजयामास ॥ २८ ॥
शौचभयदेवस्वरिखिख्यसर्कभूरभूत् ।
भग्नसनालितुमुलान्नीर्यदास्यमग्निनियत् ॥ २९ ॥

(Pārśvanātha-caritra as noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 57-164.)

¹ तर्कप्रत्यविचारदुर्गमवनोसङ्घारपद्मानन-
स्त्यद्वैभयदेवस्वरिरजनि श्वेतान्तरपामणीः ।
सद्वाच्यश्रुतिसालसा मधुकरी कोलाहलाशङ्किनी
शिला विहरपङ्कजं त्रितवतौ प्राङ्गी यदौघाननम् ॥ १ ॥
हृन्निजगाः सत्यभेदेता
भुवं करिष्यन्ति जहैः समेताः ।
इतीव रोधाय सकार तासां
यन्मं नयं वादमहार्णवं यः ॥ ७ ॥
विहङ्गसप्तगोपालसप्तनमसिः प्रेक्ष्यतपोऽहर्निशि-
र्निर्दम्बोऽपि जिनेश्वर समजनि शौमांसतः सङ्गुहः ।
यः स्फूर्जद्भुवपुङ्गुमुज्ज्वलनतौजिष्योः पुरः प्रक्षिप्तान् ।
वादे वादिवरान् विजित्य विजयश्रीसंपन्नं स यथात् ॥ ८ ॥

(Pārśvanātha-caritra by Māṇikyacandra noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 158-59.)

² See R. Mitra's Catalogue, X, pp. 39-40.

the good, Abhayadeva ¹ wrote his Vāda-mahārṇava." He was succeeded by Jineśvara Sūri, a contemporary of King Muṇja.² He was the ninth predecessor of Siddhasena Sūri, who wrote Pravacana sāroddhāra-vṛtti in Saṃvat 1242 or 1185 A.D. It was probably this Abhayadeva Sūri, who was "world-renowned" and a teacher of Śānti Sūri ³ who died in Saṃvat 1096 or 1039 A.D.

LAGHUSAMANTABHADRA (ABOUT 1000 A.D.).

87. He ⁴ wrote a commentary on the Aṣṭasāhasrī of Vidyā nanda called the Aṣṭasāhasrī-ṣaṃpāda-tātparyā-ṭīkā ⁵ and seems to have belonged to the Digambara sect and lived about 1000 A.D.

ANANTA-VIRYA (ABOUT 1039 A.D.).

88. Ananta-virya was the Digambara author of a commentary on the Parikṣamukha of Māṇikya Nandi called Parikṣā-mukha-pañjikā or Prameya-ratnamālā, as also a commentary on Akalanka's Nyāya-viniścaya called the Nyāya-viniścaya-vṛtti. He wrote the former for Śānti-śena at the request of Hirapa, son of Vijaya and Nāṇambā.⁶ Now Śāntiśena, supposed to be identical with Śānti Sūri, died in Saṃvat 1096 or A.D. 1039. His contemporary Ananta-virya must, therefore, have flourished

¹ For particulars about Abhayadeva Sūri see Peterson's 4th Report, p. iii.

² Weber's Die Handschriften-verzeichnisse, etc., p. 851. vv. 1. 2. and pp. 121. vv. 4-5. Jineśvara Sūri was probably a spiritual brother of Dhaneśvara Sūri.

³ यस्यामुद्गुहरामने गुणनिधिः श्रीसर्वदेवाकृषः

सुरौशोभयदेव सुरिरचितस्त्यातप्रमाणेऽपि च ।

तस्येयं सुगुहयादधिगत (?) दत्तात्मविद्यागुण (?)

प्रत्याख्याय चिरं भुवि प्रचरतु श्रीशान्तिद्वयः कृतिः ॥

(Uttarādhyayana brhadvṛtti by Śāntiścārya noticed by Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar in his Report on Sanskrit MSS. for 1883-84, p. 44.)

⁴ See also Weber's Die Handschriften-verzeichnisse der Königlichen Bibliothek zu Berlin, p. 827.

⁵ Vide Peterson's Sixth Report, p. xxiii.

⁶ The Aṣṭasāhasrī-ṣaṃpāda-tātparyā-ṭīkā has been noticed in Peterson's Fifth Report, pp. 216-219, where we read :

देवं स्वामिनममलं विद्यानन्दं प्रणम्य निजभक्त्या ।

विदुषोऽप्यष्टादशो विषमपदं लघुसमन्तभद्रोऽहम् ॥

⁶ वैजयप्रियपुत्रस्य चौरपथ्योपरोधनः ।

शान्तिवैद्यार्थमारब्धा परौक्षासुखपञ्जिका ॥ ६ ॥

(Parikṣā-mukhaṃ saṭīkam, noticed in Peterson's Fourth Report, p. 155.)

about that time.¹ Ananta-vīrya must have lived before the 14th century, for he is mentioned by Mādhavācārya in the chapter on Jaina darsana in the Sarvadarśana-saṁgraha.

DEVA SŪRI (1086-1169 A.D.).

89. Deva Sūri, called Vādipravara or the foremost of disputants, belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was a pupil of Muncandra Sūri. He was the author of the well-known treatise on logic called *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra* on which he himself wrote an elaborate commentary named *Syādvāda-ratnākara*.² He totally vanquished the Digambara Kumudacandrācārya in a dispute over the salvation of women [at the court of Jaya-siṃha-deva at Anahillapurapattana in N. Guzerat] and thereby practically stopped the entrance of the Digambaras into that town. The dispute³ took place in Saṁvat 1181 or 1124 A.D.

90. Ratnaprabha Sūri, a pupil of Deva Sūri, in his *Upadeśamālā-ṭīkā*,⁴ composed in Saṁvat 1238 or A.D. 1181, writes :—

“ Lord Śrī Deva Sūri, who was the crest-gem of the pupils of the esteemed Muncandra Sūri and succeeded him in his *paṭṭa* (sacred chair), conquered the Digambaras in the council-room of

¹ Vide the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XI, p. 253; and Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report on Sanskrit MSS. during 1883-84, p. 129.

² ब्राह्मदरशकर इत्यसि ग्रन्थो महत्तमः ।

वादिद्वन्द्वारकशौमद्रदेवसूरिविनिर्मितः ॥ ४ ॥

Malladhāri Rājasekhara Sūri's Pañjikā on *Syādvāda-ratnākara* vātā-ik.

³ चन्द्राहमिववर्षेण वैशाखे पूर्णिमादिने ।

ब्राह्मतो वादिशालायां तो वादिप्रतिवादिनौ ॥

(Prabhāvakacar., XXI, v. 95, quoted by Dr. Klatt in his article on “ Historical Records of the Jains ” in the Indian Antiquary, Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 254.)

⁴ Ratnaprabha Sūri observes :—

शिशुः शौमुनिचन्द्रसूरिगर्भमूर्तिं तार्थसूडामणिः

पट्टे स्ते विनिवेशितस्तदम् स श्रीदेवसूरिप्रभुः ।

ब्राह्म्याने जयसिंहदेवसूत्रपतेर्येनास्तदिगवाससा

श्रीनिर्वाणसमर्थनेन विजयस्तथाः समुत्पन्नितः ॥

तत्सङ्गप्रभो भवद्वयगुणप्रामाभिरामोदयाः

श्रीभद्रेश्वरसूरयः शुचिभित्तस्तन्मानसप्रौतये ।

श्रीरत्नप्रभसूरिभिः शुभकृते श्रीदेवसूरिप्रभोः

शिशुः शेषमकारि सप्तदशते दृढिर्विशेषार्थिनाम् ॥

(Upadeśamālāṭīkā noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, p. 167.)

King Jaya-simha-deva and raised a pillar of victory by maintaining the nirvāṇa or salvation of women [that is, holding that even women are capable of attaining nirvāṇa].”

91. In Saṃvat 1204 or 1147 A.D. Deva Sūri founded a caitya, raised a bimba at Phalavardhigrāma, and established an image of Neminātha at Arāsana.¹ He was born in Saṃvat 1143 or 1086 A.D., attained the rank of Sūri in 1174 Saṃvat or 1117 A.D., and ascended to heaven in Saṃvat 1226 or 1169 A.D.²

92. The Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokālankāra³ consists of eight chapters (paricchedas), viz.—

Subjects of the Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokālankāra.

(1) Determination of the nature of valid knowledge (*pramāṇa-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (2) determination of the

Munisundara Sūri in his Gurvāvalī composed in Saṃvat 1466 gives a similar account :—

बैनादिंश्चतुरशीतिं सुनादिसौला-
लम्बाश्चसक्थरमामदकेलिशालौ ।
वादाहवे कुमुदचन्द्रदिग्भरैन्द्रः
औसिद्धभूमिपतिसंसदि पत्तनेऽस्मिन् ॥ ७४ ॥
आह्लादरत्नाकरतर्कवेधा
सुदे स केषां नष्टि देवसूरिः ।
यतश्चतुर्विंशतिसूरिशिखं
यस्यैव नाम्ना विदितं बभूव ॥ ७५ ॥
वेदमुनीशमितेऽष्टे
देवगुरुलङ्घनतरोऽभ्युदितः ।
औमुनिचन्द्रगुरोरिति
मिथ्या बहवोऽभवन् विदिताः ॥ ७६ ॥

(Gurvāvalī published in the Jaina Yaśovijaya-granthamālā of Benares, pp. 18-19.)

¹ Vide Peterson's 4th Report, p. lv.; also Klatt, Ind. Ant. XI. p. 254.

² मिथिवेदमिवे जन्म दीक्षा युष्मदरेचरे ।
वेदाङ्गमकरे वर्षे सूरिजन्मभवत् प्रभोः ॥
रसयुष्मद्वो वर्षे आहवे मासि संगवे ।
छापपक्षस्य सप्तम्यामपराद्धे गुरोर्दिने ॥
मन्थलोकस्थितं लोकं प्रतिवाद्य पुरन्दर-
बोधका इव ते जगद्दिवं औदेवसूरयः ॥

(Prabhāvakacar., XXI, vv. 287 seq., quoted by Dr. Klatt in his article on “Historical Records of the Jains” in the Indian Antiquary, Sept. 1882, Vol. XI, p. 254.) According to some authorities Deva Sūri was born in Saṃvat 1134 or 1077 A.D.

³ The Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokālankāra has been printed and published in Benares in the Jaina Yaśovijaya series.

nature of perception (*pratyakṣa-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (3) determination of the nature of recollection, recognition, argumentation and inference (*smaraṇa-pratyabhijñāna-lakṣaṇamāna-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (4) determination of the nature of valid knowledge derived from verbal testimony or scripture (*āgamākhyā-pramāṇa-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (5) determination of the nature of objects of knowledge (*viśaya-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); (6) determination of the consequences and semblances or fallacies of knowledge (*phala-pramāṇa-svarūpādyābhāsa-nirṇaya*); (7) determination of the nature of one-sided knowledge (*nayātma-svarūpa-nirṇaya*); and (8) determination of the right procedure of a disputant and his opponent (*vādi-prativādi-nyāya-nirṇaya*).

As this work is written on the same plan as Mūnikya Nandi's *Parikṣamukha-sūtra* or Akalanka's *Nyāya-viniścaya* as well as Siddhasena Divākara's *Nyāyāvatāra*, I shall pass over the common points, mentioning only the special features.

93. *Pramāṇa* or valid knowledge is defined here as the knowledge which ascertains the nature of itself and all other things. The intercourse

between the sense-organs and the objects of sense is not *pramāṇa* (valid knowledge), for though it can ascertain the nature of objects outside itself, it cannot ascertain its own nature, since it has no consciousness. *Pramāṇa* must certainly be *knowledge*, for it is capable of choosing what is desirable and rejecting what is undesirable. It must also be definite in character, for it is opposed to superimposition (*samāropa*). Superimposition is of three kinds: (1) inversion (*viparyaya*)—such as to look upon a pearl-oyster as a piece of silver; (2) doubt (*saṁśaya*)—such as: is this a post or a man? and (3) uncertainty (*anadhyavasāya*) consisting in a mere cogitation in the mind as to what the thing might be.

94. *Pramāṇa* (valid knowledge) is of two kinds: (1) direct

Direct knowledge.

Perception.

(*pratyakṣa*) perception, and (2) indirect (*parokṣa*). The direct knowledge or perception is of two kinds: practical (*sāṁvṃyavahārīka*) and transcendental (*pāramārthīka*). The practical direct knowledge again is subdivided as that which arises through the sense-organs (*indriya-nibandhana*) and that which does not arise through the sense-organs (*anindriya-nibandhana*) but through the mind (*manas*). Each of these passes through four stages,¹ viz.: (1) *avagraha*, distinguishing the type whether it be, e.g., horse or man, but not discerning the characteristics;

¹ The explanation of *avagraha*, etc., as given here is taken from Col. Jarrett's translation of the *Ain-i-Akbari*, published by the Asiatic Society of Bengal, vol. III, p. 190, as the portion related to *pramāṇa* in the *Jaina*

(2) *śhā*, inquiring, e.g., whence came the man and from what country came the horse ; (3) *avāya*, arriving at a correct identification of the above, and (4) *dhāraṇā*, recollecting the thing particularised and keeping it in mind.

The transcendental direct knowledge (*pāramārthika*) is that which comes exclusively from the illumination of the soul and is profitable to emancipation. It is two-fold : (1) *vikala* (defective) including *avadhi-jñāna* (limited knowledge), i.e., knowledge of special objects which, near or remote, are not differentiated, and *manaḥ-paryāya*, i.e., definite knowledge of another's thoughts and the laying bare of the secrets of the heart ; and (2) *sakala*, i.e., perfect, which is the unobstructed intuition of the entire aspects of a thing. One who possesses that perfect transcendental knowledge is called an *arhat*, i.e., one freed from all faults or obstructions.

95. Indirect knowledge (*parokṣa*) is of five kinds : viz., (1) Indirect knowledge. recollection (*smarana*) ; (2) recognition (*pratyabhijñāna*) ; (3) argumentation (*tarka*) ; (4) inference (*anumāna*) ; (5) verbal testimony or the knowledge derived from the words of a reliable person or scripture (*āgama*).

96. Inference is of two kinds : (1) *svārtha*, for one's own self, and (2) *parārtha*, for the sake of others. Inference. *Hetu* (reason or the middle term) is defined as that which cannot happen except in connection with the major term. The definition that the *hetu* (middle term) is that which possesses three characteristics, is to be rejected as involving fallacies.¹ Some maintain the threefold characteristic or division of the *hetu* (reason or middle term), but do not admit the necessity of using the minor term (*pakṣa*) in an

chapter of Ain-i-Akbari very closely resembles that in the *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra*. Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's explanation of these terms given on p. 93, footnote, of his Report on Sanskrit MSS., for 1883-84, is, however, different.

¹ निश्चितान्यथानुपपत्त्येकलक्षणे हेतुः न तु त्रिलक्षणादिः ।

तस्य हेलाभासस्यापि सम्भवात् ॥ ११ ॥

(*Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra*,
Chap. III.)

This is an attack on Dharmakīrti and other Buddhist logicians who define the three characteristics of *hetu* as follows :—

हेतुः पुनर्निश्चितस्य चतुर्मेवैव सत्त्वमेव ।

सपक्ष एव सत्त्वम् । असपक्षे चासत्त्वमेव निश्चितम् ।

(*Nyāyabindu*, Chapter II.)

inference.¹ Again, according to others, as the connection or absence of connection between the middle and the major terms can be shown by internal inseparable connection (*antar-vyāpti*), the example forming the external inseparable connection (*bahir-vyāpti*) is useless.² For instance :—

The hill (minor term) is fiery (major term), because it is smoky (middle term) as a kitchen (example).

Here the hill is an integral part of the inference, and in it may be found the necessary connection between fire and smoke. Why then should we burden our inference with an example from without? The kitchen certainly shows the same connection: fire and smoke are found together there: but the kitchen is not an essential part of the inference, and so for the purpose in hand the connection which it proves may be described as the external inseparable connection. We must look to logical neatness, and the economy of mental labour, since the mind is liable to be confused when the unessential is brought across its track.

97. The application (*upanaya*) and conclusion (*nigamana*) as parts of the syllogism are also useless, but these together with the example are to be employed to convince men of small intellect.³

Parts of a syllogism. *Avayava* or parts of a syllogism are stated to be the following :—

1. *Pakṣa-prayoga* (use of the minor term, otherwise called proposition, *pratijñā*)—the hill is fiery.
2. *Hetu-prayoga* (use of the middle term)—because it is smoky.
3. *Dṛṣṭānta* (example)—whatever is fiery is smoky just as a kitchen.
4. *Upanaya* (application)—this hill is smoky.
5. *Nigamana* (conclusion)—therefore this hill is fiery.

98. Non-existence (*abhāva* or *anupalabdhi*) is subdivided as (1) antecedent (*prāgabhāva*); (2) subsequent (*pradhvaṃsābhāva*); (3) mutual (*itaretarābhāva*); and (4) absolute (*atyantābhāva*). Various kinds of *ābhāsa* or fallacy are also enumerated. Under the verbal

¹ चिबिधं साधनमभिधायैव तत्समर्थनं विदधानः कः खलु न पक्षप्रयोगम् अङ्गीकुरुते ॥१९॥

(Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokaṅkāra,
Chap. III.)

² अन्वयार्थान्ना हेतोः साध्यप्रत्यायने शङ्कावशतो च वदित्याप्तेरङ्गावनं व्यर्थम् ॥ २५ ॥

(Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokaṅkāra,
Chap. III.)

³ मन्दमतीकु सुषादयितुं दृष्टान्तापनयनिगमनान्यपि प्रयोष्यामि ॥ २६ ॥

(Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokaṅkāra,
Chap. III.)

testimony (i.e., *āgama*) as also under the method of one-sided interpretation (*naya*) there is given an elaborate exposition of the *Saptabhāṅginaya* (sevenfold paralogism). The mediate and immediate results of valid knowledge (*pramāṇa*) have been clearly laid down.

99. The results of knowledge and the practical use made of them are stated to be not illusory (*saṃvṛti*), but real (*pāramārthika*).

100. Under *naya* (the method of comprehending a thing from one particular point of view), the fallacies of it (*nayābhāsa*) are also enumerated thus :—

- (1) *Naigamābhāsa* (the fallacy of the *naigama*)—e.g., in estimating a soul we make a distinction between its “existence” (generic property) and its “consciousness” (specific property).
- (2) *Samgrahābhāsa* (the fallacy of the collective)—occurs when we call a thing real if it possesses the generic property alone, altogether losing sight of its specific properties, as when we say a bamboo is real so far as it is a tree, but it has no specific properties.
- (3) *Vyavahārābhāsa* (the fallacy of the practical)—e.g., the Cārvāka philosophy which makes a wrong distinction of substance, quality, etc.
- (4) *Rjusūtrābhāsa* (the fallacy of the straight expression)—as the Tathāgata philosophy which altogether denies the reality of things.
- (5) *Sabdābhāsa* (the verbal fallacy)—occurs when we recognise the distinction of times into past, present and future, but go on attaching one and the same meaning to a word in all the three times, e.g., if we now use the word “*kratu*” (sacrifice) in the sense of “strength” which it signified a thousand years ago.
- (6) *Samabhirūdḥābhāsa* (the fallacy of the subtle)—occurs when we interpret synonymous words such as Indra, Sakra, Purandara, etc., signifying altogether different things.
- (7) *Evambhūtābhāsa* (the fallacy of the such-like)—occurs when a thing is discarded simply because it does not, at the moment, possess the properties implied by the name, e.g., Rāma is not a man (a thinking animal) because he is not at present thinking.

101. The soul (*ātmanā*) which is the doer and enjoyer, and an embodiment of consciousness, is of the same size as its body.

In every person there is a separate soul which, having got rid of the bondage of its *karma* (act-fruits), attains emancipation.

102. The last chapter expounds the method of debate.

Discussion (*Vāda*) consists in assertion and counter-assertion for the establishment of a certain proposition by rejecting its opposite. The disputant or the person who opens the discussion may be eager either to gain a victory or to ascertain a truth. The truth may be sought either for one's own self as a disciple seeks it, or for others as a teacher seeks it. The same remarks apply to the opponent or respondent. There are four constituents of a council of discussion, *viz.*, (1) the disputant (*vādī*); (2) the opponent (*prativādī*); (3) the members (*sabhya*); and (4) the president (*sabhāpati*). The duty of the disputant and his opponent consists in establishing his own side and opposing the other side by means of proof. The members must be acceptable to both the parties in respect of the skill in grasping their dogmas; they must have a good memory, be very learned, and possess genius, patience and impartiality. Their duties consist in stating the assertions and replies of the disputant and his opponent with reference to the particular subject of discussion, in estimating the merits and demerits of their arguments and counter-arguments, in occasionally interrupting them for setting forth some established conclusions, and in, as far as possible, declaring the result of the discussion. The President must be endowed with wisdom, authority, forbearance and impartiality. His duty consists in judging the speeches of the parties and the members, as also in preventing quarrels, etc., among them. In the event of the parties being desirous of victory alone, they may continue the discussion with vigour as long as the members wish; but if they are eager to ascertain the truth alone, they may continue the discussion so long as the truth is not ascertained and so long as they retain their vigour.

HEMACANDRA SŪRI (1088-1172 A.D.).

103. Hemacandra Sūri¹ (surnamed Kalikāla-sarvajña), born at Dhandhuka in Ahmedabad, was a pupil of Devacandra of the Vajrasākhā. He was a contemporary of King Jaya Simha and is said to have been the preceptor of Māhārāja Kumāra Pāla of Guzerat about Samvat 1199-1229. He was the author of a large number of works such as *Kāvyānuśāsana-vṛtti*, Chan-

¹ For details about Hemacandra, see Bühler's "Ueber das Leben des Jaina Monches Hemacandra"; Peterson's 4th Report, p. cxli, and p. 82; and also Peterson's lecture on the story of Hema Candra published in the *Bombay Gazette*, August 29, 1895.

donuśāsanavṛtti, Abhidhāna-cintāmaṇi or Nāmamālā, Anekārtha-saṁgraha, Dvāśraya-mahā-kāvya, Triṣaṣṭiśalākāpuruṣa-caritra (a part of which is called Mahāvīracaritra and the appendix called Parisiṣṭaparva), Yogaśāstra, Nighaṇṭuśeṣa, etc.

104. He was also the author of a most important work on logic called *Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā*,¹ on which he himself wrote a commentary. This work, which is divided into five chapters, is written in the *Sūtra* or aphoristic style, and not in the form of a *prakaraṇa* (commentary).

105. He was a spiritual brother of Pradyumna Sūri,² was born in Saṁvat 1145 or 1088 A.D., took the vow (*vratā*) in 1150 Saṁvat or 1093 A.D., attained the rank of Sūri in 1166 Saṁvat or 1109 A.D., and ascended to heaven (died) in 1229 Saṁvat or 1172 A.D.³

CANDRAPRABHA SŪRI (1102 A.D.).

106. Candraprabha Sūri (born in Guzerat), who founded the Pūrṇimāgaccha⁴ in Saṁvat 1159 or 1102 A.D., was a pupil of

¹ A manuscript of the *Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā* with the commentary by the author himself has been noticed by Peterson in his 5th Report on Sanskrit MSS., pp 147-148. In explaining why the *Pramāṇa-mīmāṃsā* was written in the form of aphorisms, Hemacandra in the first chapter of the commentary says:—

वाचकमुल्लिखितानि सकलशास्त्रचूडामणिभूतानि तत्त्वार्थसूत्राणि नित्यं यद्येव-
मकलङ्कधर्मकौर्त्तादिवत् प्रकरणमेव किं नारभ्यते किमनया सूत्रकारत्वाद्दीपविक्रया
मेवं बोधः । भिन्नवचिद्वयं जनकतो नास्य स्वेच्छाप्रतिबन्धो लौकिकराजकौथं वा
शासनमस्तीति यत्किञ्चिदेतत् तच्च वर्षेसमूहात्मकैः पञ्चभिरध्यायैः शास्त्रमेतदरचयदा-
चार्यः । तस्य च प्रेक्षावत्प्रवृत्त्यंगमभिधातुमिदमादिसूत्रम् । अथ प्रमाणमोमांसा
अथ रत्यस्य अधिकारार्थत्वात् ।

(Quoted in Peterson's 5th Report, p 148.)

² श्रीमांशुद्रकुलेभवद्गुणनिधिः प्रद्युम्नसूरिप्रमु-

र्षेभ्यस्तस्य स सिद्धहेमविधयः श्रीहेमसूरिविधिः ॥

(Candrasena's commentary on Utpādasiddhiprakaraṇa, a manuscript of which is noticed in Peterson's 3rd Report, p. 209.)

³ शरवेदेश्वरे वर्षे कार्तिके पूर्णिमानिशि ।

जन्माभवत् प्रभोर्गोमवाणशंभो व्रतं तथा ॥

रसवतीश्वरे सूरिप्रतिष्ठा समजायत ।

नन्दद्वयराशौ वर्षेऽवसानमभवत् प्रभोः ॥

(Prabhāvakacar., XXII, v. 851 seq., quoted by Klatt in Ind. Ant., Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 254.)

⁴ For the origin of the Pūrṇimāgaccha see Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 147.

Jayasimha Sūri and preceptor of Dharmaghoṣa. He¹ was the author of Darśanaśuddhi, otherwise called Samyaktva-prakarana, and possibly also of the two logical treatises called the Prameyaratnakosa and Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti.² He was a great logician, and in debate appeared as a lion before the opponents who resembled elephants.³

107. The Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti is an excellent commentary on the Nyāyāvatāra of Siddhasena Divākara. In it mention is made of the Buddhist logicians Dharmottara, Arcata⁴ and others, and there is also a criticism of the views of Saugata, Naiyāyika, Mimāṃsaka, Vaiśeṣika, Sāṃkhya, Cārvāka, Bauddha, Śauddhodani, Kaṇabhakṣa, Akṣapāda, Brahama-vādi, etc.

NEMICANDRA KAVI (ABOUT 1150 A.D.).

108. Nemicandra, born in Guzerat, who combatted the views of the Hindu philosopher Kaṇāda, was a great teacher of

¹ For Candraprabha Sūri see also Peterson's 4th Report, p. xxvii.

² The manuscript of Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti, which I consulted, was obtained from Bhavanagar, Bombay, through Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya. In the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti itself there is no mention of Candraprabha Sūri. Elsewhere I have seen it stated that it was the work of that author. The authorship must, however, for the present, remain an open question. In the colophon of the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti it is stated that it was the work of Siddhasena-Divākara-vyākhyānaka or simply Siddha-vyākhyānaka which was evidently a surname. Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya relying on the line **शास्त्राद्-चूडानवि-सिद्धनामः** (quoted from Ratnaprabha Sūri's Upadeśamālā-viśeṣa-vṛtti in Peterson's 3rd Report, p. 168) are inclined to identify Siddha-vyākhyānaka with Siddharṣi who lived in Śaṃvat 962 or 905 A.D. (as is evident from Peterson's 4th Report, p. cxxix). There is another commentary on the Nyāyāvatāra by Haribhadra Sūri. For Darśana-śuddhi, *vide* Peterson 3, App. p. 91; for Prameya-ratna-kōśa, *vide* the Jaināgama List, published in Bombay, p. 77; and for the Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti *vide* Peterson 3, p. xvi.

³ तीर्थे वीरविभोः सुधर्मगणहृत्सन्मानलब्धोन्नति
स्वारिकोऽप्यलचन्द्रगजलक्ष्मिप्रोक्षावशो न युतिः ।
साहित्यागमनर्कलक्षणमहाविद्यापगासागरः
त्रैलोक्यप्रभस्वरिरद्भुतमतिर्वादीभसिंहोऽभवत् ॥ १ ॥

(Daśavaikālikaṭīkā by Tilakācārya, noticed in Peterson's 5th Report, p. 65.)

+ प्रमाणेत्यादि अनेन च तादात्म्यतदुत्पत्तिस्तत्त्वसंबन्धविकलतया ध्वनेव विरहे
प्रति प्रामाण्यवोगाद् अभिधेयादिसूचनद्वारोत्पन्नायं संशयमुक्तेन नोत्तारः अवर्गं प्रति
प्रोक्षाद्यने इति धर्कोत्तरो मन्यते सर्वदक्षु साह न आवकोत्याहकनेत्
प्रामाण्याभावात् तेषां आप्रमाणादप्रवृत्तेः ।

(Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti, on verse 1.)

logic.¹ He was a pupil of Vairasvāmi and preceptor of Śāgareṇḍu (Śāgaracandra) Muni, as is mentioned by Māṇikyacandra, Śāgareṇḍu Muṇi's pupil, in his Pārśvanātha-caritra written in Saṃvat 1276 or 1219 A.D. As Māṇikyacandra flourished about 1219 A.D., his preceptor's preceptor Nemicandra² must have lived about 1150 A.D. Nemicandra was styled a *Kavi*.³

ĀNANDA SŪRI AND AMARACANDRA SŪRI, NICKNAMED TIGER-CUB AND LION-CUB (1093-1150 A.D.).

109. These two, born in Guzerat, were great logicians who, even in their boyhood having overcome their elephant-like opponents in dispute, were nicknamed, respectively, *Vyāghra-śiśuka* (Tiger-cub) and *Sinḥa-śiśuka* (Lion-cub).⁴ They⁵ were the twin pupils and successors of Mahendra Sūri in the Nāgendra-gaccha, and were succeeded by Haribhadra Sūri. As Siddharāja from whom they received their nicknames ascended the throne in Saṃvat 1150 or 1093 A.D., they must have flourished at the beginning of the 12th century A.D. It is probably these two

१ बहन्तील्लनविस्त्रासवसतिश्चक्षुषोऽर्षपति
क्षयहोदयचन्द्रनाः समजनि शोनेमिचन्द्रप्रभुः ।
निःसामान्यगुणैर्भुवि प्रसन्नरैः प्राप्तेयमेष्टोत्पलैः
यक्षभे कक्षभोजिनो मुनिपतेर्यथे' मत्तं सवैतः ॥ १९ ॥

(Pārśvanātha caritra noticed in Peterson 3, p. 160.)

The same verse is quoted almost verbatim in the *Kāvya-prakāśa-saṃ-keta* by Māṇikyacandra Sūri, noticed in Peterson 3, p. 321.

² For Nemicandra, see also Peterson 4, p. lxxd.

³ See Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 122.

⁴ Udayaprabha Sūri, who was the successor of Haribhadra Sūri through Vijayasena Sūri, in his *Dharmābhyudaya-mahākāvya*, noticed by Peterson in his 3rd Report, pp. 16-19, writes:—

आनन्दसूरिरिति [तस्य बभूव] मिश्रः
पूर्वोऽपराः शमधरोऽमरचन्द्रसूरिः ।
धर्मद्विषय दशनावि पापदह-
जोदक्षमो जगति यो विशदो विभक्तः ॥ १ ॥
सहायवाक्यमपयोनिधिमन्दराद्रि-
मुद्राणुषोः किमनयोः सुमने मन्त्रिः
वाक्येऽपि निर्दक्षितवादिमजो जगद्
यो व्याघ्रचिह्नमिन्द्रकाविति सिद्धराजः ॥ ४ ॥

⁵ For further particulars of Ānanda Sūri and Amaracandra Sūri see Peterson 4, p. vii. 8

logicians who are referred to by the Hindu logician Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya in his *Tattva-cintāmaṇi* under *Siṃha-vyāghri-lakṣaṇa* of Vyāpti.

HARIBHADRA SŪRI (ABOUT 1168 A.D.).

110. We find mention of at least two Śvetāmbara Jaina authors bearing the name Haribhadra Sūri. One died¹ in Saṃvat 535 or 478 A.D., while the other, who was a pupil of Ānanda Sūri and Amaracandra Sūri of the Nāgendragaccha, lived about Saṃvat 1225 or 1168 A.D.² It is this second Haribhadra Sūri who was called “Kalikāla-Gautama.”³ He must have been an eminent logician if we suppose him to be the author⁴ of the *Śaddarśana-samuccaya*, the *Daśavaikālika-niryukti-tīkā*, the *Nyāya-praveśaka-sūtra* and the *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti*. There are

¹ पंचसय पणतौय विद्धमकालाक्षो भति चत्तमिचो ।

हरिभद्रस्वरिखरो निष्कुचो दिसड सिवसुरस्स ॥ १०० ॥

(Gacchotpatti-prakṛṇaka quoted in the *Gāthāsāhasrī* noticed in Peterson 3, p. 284.)

² Klatt refers to Bühler's *Sukṛtasamkīrtana*, pp. 24-25; see Peterson 4, pp. cxxxix, cxi.

³ सिदान्नोपनिषद्विषयद्वयो धौजन्मभूमिस्थयोः

पट्टे श्रीहरिभद्रस्वरिभवारिचिषामयणोः ।

आन्वा शून्यमनात्रयेरितिचिराद्विज्ञप्रवक्ष्यामः

सकुट्टैः कलिकालमौतम इति प्छातिचित्तेने गुणैः ॥ ५ ॥

(*Dharmābhyudaya-mahākāvya* by Udayaprabha Sūri noticed in Peterson 3, Appendix I, p. 18.)

⁴ In the concluding lines of the *Daśavaikālika-niryukti-tīkā* it is stated that the author of that work was one Haribhadra Sūri who was a *dharma-putra* of *Yākinī*. A similar description of Haribhadra the author of *Śaddarśana-samuccaya* is found in the opening sentences of Guṇaratna's commentary on that work (dated about 1409 A.D.). The *Caturviṃśati-prabandha* by Rājasekhara Sūri composed in Saṃvat 1405 or 1348 A.D. makes a like reference to Haribhadra, the author of *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti*. Now the *dharma-putra* of *Yākinī* is generally held to be a surname of the first Haribhadra Sūri whose disciples were Haṃsa and Paramahaṃsa, as is evident from Prabhācandra Sūri's *Prabhāvaka-caritra* dated about 1277 A.D.

In the *Gacchotpatti-prakaraṇa*, *Gāthā-sāhasrī*, *Vicāra-sāra-prakaraṇa*, *Vicārāmṛta-saṃgraha*, *Tapāgacchapaṭṭāvalī*, *Kharataragaccha-paṭṭāvalī*, etc., Haribhadra Sūri I. is stated to have flourished in Saṃvat 535 or 478 A.D.

Now the *Nyāyāvatāra* which is alleged to have been commented on by Haribhadra Sūri I. was itself composed about 533 A.D. (that is, after 478 A.D.), and *Dharmakīrti*, whose logical doctrines have been referred to in the *Śaddarśana-samuccaya*, lived about 650 A.D. These facts prove that Haribhadra the author of *Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti* and *Śaddarśana-samuccaya* lived after 650 A.D.

strong grounds for supposing that the Śaḍdarśana-samuccaya was not the work of the first Haribhadra Sūri, as it refers in the chapter on the Bauddhadarśana to the views of such authors as Dignāga, Dharmakīrti,¹ and others who flourished long after the 5th century A.D. The six systems (śaḍdarśana) treated by him are (1) Bauddha, (2) Naiyāyika, (3) Sāṃkhya, (4) Jaina, (5) Vaiśeṣika and (6) Jaiminiya.

111. Haribhadra Sūri is often described² as having protected the word of the Arhats like a mother by his 1,400 works. He is said to have used the word *viraha* (separation or sorrow) as his mark in the last verse of each of his works. He was by birth a Brāhmaṇa and was chaplain to king Jitāri whose capital was

Dr. Jacobi in his letter, dated the 21st October 1907, writes to me that "Haribhadra used the word *viraha* in the Samaraiccakahā, which is alluded to by Siddharṣi who wrote in 905 A.D."

Regarding the dates of the Śaḍdarśana-samuccaya, etc., he observes:—These are "unanimously ascribed to the first Haribhadra," "whose date I believe, with Prof. Loumann, to have been wrongly referred to the Samvat era instead of the Valabhi or Gupta era, which commenced in 319 A.D."

According to Dr. Jacobi, therefore, the Śaḍdarśana-samuccaya etc., were written by the first Haribhadra Sūri, who died in 535 Gupta Samvat or 854 A.D.

Dr. Jacobi's theory removes many of our difficulties, yet it is far from being conclusive, as the Jaina authors very seldom used the Gupta era. Moreover, it is inexplicable why Vācaspati Miśra and Udayanācārya did not refer to such an excellent compendium of Indian philosophy as the Śaḍdarśana-samuccaya if it existed as early as the 9th or 11th century A.D. I am therefore inclined to believe that Haribhadra Sūri II was the author of the Śaḍdarśana-samuccaya, Nyāyāvātāra-vṛtti, etc., while the Samaraiccakahā and other treatises might be the works of the first Haribhadra Sūri.

But I must confess that the modern Jaina Paṇḍitas such as Munis Dharmaviṇaya and Indravijaya firmly believe that the author of all these works was the first Haribhadra Sūri who, according to them, flourished in 535 Vikrama Samvat, or 478 A.D.

प्रत्यक्षं कल्पनापोदमधानं तत्र बुध्यताम् ।

विरुपाक्षिज्ञतो विद्विज्ज्ञानं अनुमानसंश्रितम् ॥

(Śaḍdarśana-samuccaya, chapter on Bauddha-darśana, p. 38, edited by Dr. Suali).

This verse refers without doubt to the definition of *Pratyakṣa* and *Anumāna* given by Dharmakīrti who lived about 650 A.D.

² Klatt in his "Paṭṭāvali of the Kharastaragaccha" in the Ind. Ant., Vol. XI, Sept. 1882, p. 247; also Peterson 3, p. 35. Also:

सोमि बोधिरिभदं तं येनार्द्धमैव चरा ।

चतुर्दशप्रकरणमव्याख्यत माहवत् ॥ ११ ॥

Amarasvāmīcarita by Muniratna Sūri noticed in Peterson 3, p. 91.

Chittore near the Citrakūṭa hill.¹ He was instructed in the Jaina doctrine by Jinabhaṭa. Two of his pupils, named Hamsa and Paramahamsa, are said to have left him as missionaries of the Jaina faith, and to have been slain in the Bhota country (Tibet) by the fanatical Buddhists whom they sought to convert. The sorrow caused by the death of these two pupils is said to have been symbolised in the word *viraha*.

112. It is generally supposed that Haribhadra Sūri, whose pupils were killed in Tibet, was the first author of that name. But there will be no inconsistency if we suppose him to be the second Haribhadra Sūri, for the religious intercourse between India and Tibet was more frequent in the 12th century A.D. than in the 5th century, when Tibet had scarcely emerged into the ken of history.

RATNAPRABHA SŪRI (1181 A.D.).

113. Ratnaprabha Sūri, who belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect, was a logician of repute, being the author of a light commentary (*laghu-ṭīkā*) on the *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvālokāṅkāra* called *Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā*² in which are quoted the views of the Buddhist logicians Arcāṭa (q. v.) and Dharmottara (q. v.)

114. While in Broach at the Aśvabodhatīrtha in Śaṁvat 1238 or 1181 A.D., he wrote another work called *Upadeśamālā-vṛtti*³ to please Bhadrēśvara Sūri and in payment of the debt he owed to Vijayasena Sūri, the brother of Bhadrēśvara. There he gives his spiritual descent in the Vṛhadgaccha as follows: (1) Muncandra Sūri; (2) Deva Sūri; (3) Bhadrēśvara Sūri and (4) Ratnaprabha Sūri.⁴

¹ Vide Introduction to *Śaddarśanasamuccaya* published in the Chowkhamba series, Benares.

प्रमाणे च प्रमेये च वास्तानां बुद्धिसिद्धये ।
 किञ्चिद् वचनवातुर्थ्यचापलायेयमादधे ॥
 प्रमेयरत्नकोटौभिः पर्णैर्नृणाकरो महान्
 तत्रावतारमात्रेण हृत्तरङ्गाः क्षतार्थता ॥

² (*Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā*, Muni Dharmavijaya's MSS., p. 99). A part of the *Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā* has been printed and published in the Benares Jaina Yaśovijaya series.

श्रीरत्नप्रभखरिभिः शुभकृते श्रीदेवखरिप्रभोः ।
 मिच्छेः सेयमकारि सम्पदकृते हृत्तिर्विशेषार्थिनाम् ॥
 विष्णुमाहसुखीकाकं (१११८) वर्षे माघे समधिता ।
 एकादशसहस्राणि सार्धं पद्यमृतं तथा ॥

(*Upadeśamālā-vṛtti*, noticed in Peterson 5, p. 124).

⁴ For other particulars of Ratnaprabha Sūri, vide Peterson 4, p. cii. Compare also Weber II, p. 922, note 7.

MALLIṢEṆA SŪRI (1292 A.D.).

115. He belonged to the Nagendra Gaccha of the Śvetāmbara sect, and was the author of the *Syādvādamāñjarī*, a commentary on Hemacandra's *Vitarāga-stuti* or *Dvātrimśikā*. The *Syādvāda-mañjarī* contains an exposition of the *Pramāṇa*, *Saptabhaṅginī*, etc., and criticises Akṣapāda's theories of *Pramāṇa*, *Chala*, *Jāti*, *Nigrahasthāna*, etc. The doctrines of the *Saṃkhya*, *Aulūkyā*, *Jaiminiya*, *Bhaṭṭapāda*, *Vedānta*, *Yogācāra*, *Madhyamika*, *Cārvaka*, etc., have also been his favourite subjects of attack. At the close of his work Malliṣeṇa describes himself as a pupil of Udayaprabha Sūri and as having composed the work in Śaka 1214 or A.D. 1292.¹

RĀJASEKHARA SŪRI (1348 A.D.).

116. Rājasekhara Sūri, or Malladhāri Śrī Rājasekhara Sūri, belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the author of the *Ratnāvatārikā-pañjikā*,² a sub-commentary on the *Pramāṇa-naya-tattvāloka* *lankara*, as also of two other works called *Syādvāda kalikā* and *Caturviṃśatiprabandha*.³ He is also the author of a *Pañjikā* (commentary) on the *Nyāya-kandali* of the Hindu philosopher Śrī-dhara. He studied the *Nyāya-kandali* under teacher Jinaprabha,⁴ and is said to have lived in Śamvat 1405 or 1348 A.D.⁵

JÑĀNA CANDRA (1350 A.D.).

117. He belonged to the Śvetāmbara sect and was the author of a gloss on the *Ratnāvatārikā* called the *Ratnāvatārikā-tippana*, which discusses many abstruse points of logic and criticises the

¹ ओमक्षिपेष्टरिभिरकारि तत्त्वद्वगमदिनमणिभिः ।

इतिरित्यं मन्त्रविमितशकाद् दोषमहसि शनौ ॥ १ ॥

(*Syādvādamāñjarī*, p. 220, printed in the Benares Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series, and edited by Dāmodara Lal Gosvāmi.)

² A part of the *Ratnāvatārikā-pañjikā* has been printed and published in the Benares Jaina Yāsovijaya series.

³ This work has been published by Hira Lal Haṃsarāja at Jāma-nagara in Kathiwar.

⁴ ओमस्मिन्नप्रभविभोरधिगत्य न्यायकदलीं किञ्चित् ।

तस्यां विदितिलवमहं करवै स्वपरोपकाराय ॥

(*Nyāyakandali* of Śrīdhara with the *Pañjikā* of Rājasekhara noticed in Peterson 3, p. 273; cf. also Peterson 3, pp. 28-29.)

⁵ Vide Weber II, p. 1207.

views of Dignāga¹ and others. He composed this work² under orders from his preceptor Rājasekhara Sūri, who flourished in 1348 A.D. Jñāna Candra's date may approximately be fixed at about 1350 A.D.

GUṆARATNA (1409 A.D.).

118. Guṇaratna belonged to the Tapāgaccha of the S'vetāmbara sect, and was the distinguished author of a commentary on the Śaṅkarasāna-samuccaya³ called Śaṅkarasāna-samuccaya-vṛtti or Tarka-rahasya-dīpikā in which the Nyāya (logic) along with other systems has been lucidly explained. He also wrote the Kriyā-ratna-samuccaya.

119. He is mentioned by Ratna-sekhara Sūri in the Śrāddha-pratikramaṇa-sūtra-vṛtti composed in Samvat 1496 or A.D. 1439.⁴ In that work Guṇaratna is mentioned as a pupil

तेनान्यापोद्बिषयाः प्रोक्ताः सामान्यबोधराः ।

मन्दास बुद्धयश्चैव बहुन्येषामसम्भवात् ॥

अथ व्याख्या तेनोच्यते दिग्गजादेन

अन्यापोद्बिषयाः ... प्रोक्ताः ॥

Jñānacandra's Ratnāvatārikā-tippana, chap. I, p. 7, published in Yaśovijaya-granthamālā of Benares.

² रत्नाकरावतारिका वरटिप्पणं तत्

ज्ञानेन्द्रस्यतरणौः स्वमतिः प्रवृत्तौ ।

तन्निष्पन्नो रचितवान् मल्लधारिपूज्य-

श्रीराजशेखरगुरोश्च निदेशमाय

Quoted from the MSS. of Ratnākarāvatārikā-tippanaka, lent to me by Muni Dharmavijaya. A part of this work has been printed and published in the Benares Jaina Yaśovijaya series.

³ Śaṅkarasāna-samuccaya with Vṛtti, edited by Dr. Suali, is being published by the Asiatic Society of Bengal. There is another commentary on Śaṅkarasānasamuccaya called Laghuvṛtti by Maṇibhadra. It has been published in the Chowkhamba series.

⁴ The Śrāddha-pratikramaṇa-sūtra-vṛtti by Ratnasekhara Sūri, has been noticed in Peterson 3, pp. 226-227, whence the following lines are quoted :—

विद्याततपेक्षाया जगति जगत्तत्त्वज्ञानयोग्यम् ।

श्रीशेखरगुरुकृपाया तदनुकम्पादिदिताः ॥ १ ।

पञ्च च तेषां शिक्षाकोषाया ज्ञानसामरा मुरवः । २

कुलमन्त्रादिनीषाः श्रीगणेशादनीषाश्च ॥ ३ ॥

of Devasundara, who attained the exalted position of Sūri at Aṇahillapattana in Saṃvat 1420 or A.D. 1363.¹ Guṇaratna must, therefore, have lived between A.D. 1363 and A.D. 1439. Devasundara Sūri, teacher of Guṇaratna, was a contemporary of Muni-sundara Sūri, the famous author of the Gurvāvalī² composed in Saṃvat 1466 or A.D. 1409. Guṇaratna himself says that his Kriyāratna-samuccaya³ was composed in Saṃvat 1466 or A.D. 1409.

120. Guṇaratna, in his elaborate commentary (*Vṛtti*) on the Śaddarsana-samuccaya, has mentioned Śauddhodani, Dharmot-tarācārya, Arcata, Dharmakirti, Prajñākara, Kamalaśīla, Dig-nāga, and other Buddhist authors, as well as Tarkabhāṣā, Hetubindu, Arcata-tarkatikā, Pramāṇa-vārtika, Tattvasaṃ-graha, Nyāyabindu, Nyāyapraveśaka, and other Buddhist works on logic, etc., in the chapter on the Bauddha system. Mention has also been made, in the chapter on the Nyāya, of such Hindu logicians as Akṣapāda, Vātsyāyana, Udyotakara, Vācas-pati, Udayana, Srikanṭha, Abhayatilakopādhyāya, Jayanta, and of such works as Nyāya-sūtra, Nyāyabhāṣya, Nyāya-vārtika, Tātparyatīkā, Tātparyapariśuddhi, Nyāyālankāra, Nyāyālankāravṛtti, etc. The Nyāya-sāra of Bhā-sarvajña and the eighteen commentaries on it such as Nyāyabhūṣaṇa, Nyāya-kalikā, Nyāyakusumāñjali, etc., have also been mentioned.

वदुर्धनवृत्तिनिश्चयविचारनिश्चयः ।

वर्णा औद्युक्ता प्रसादतोऽपि वदुर्विचरिते ।

औरज्येष्ठरम्यवृत्तिनिश्चयः कृतः कृतितुष्टे ॥ १

¹ Vide Dr. Klatt on the Paṭṭāvalī of the Kharataragaccha in the Ind. Ant., Vol. XI, September 1882, pp. 255-256; cf. also Weber II, p. 884; and Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's Report, 1883-84, p. 157.

२ रसरसमनुमितवर्षे १४९९ सुनिष्ठुन्दरकरिणा कृता पूर्वम् ।

मध्ययोरवधार्या गुर्वालोयं जयनीया ॥ ८२ ॥

(Gurvāvalī, Jaina-Yaśovijaya grantha-mālā series, p. 109).

३ कावी वदुर्ध्वपूर्व १४९९ वदुर्ध्वमते श्रीविक्रमाकाङ्क्षे

गुर्वादेशवशाद्विचरितं च सदा सान्द्योपकारं परम् ।

यन्मौ औद्युक्तरकरितनोत् प्रज्ञाविज्ञानोऽप्यसुं

निर्धेत्तुपकृतिप्रधानजननैः शोध्यस्वयं धीधनैः ॥ ९२ ॥

(Kriyāratna-samuccaya, Jaina Yaśovi-jaya granthamālā series, p. 309).

DHARMA-BHŪṢAṆA (ABOUT 1600 A.D.).

121. A Digambara author who wrote the *Nyāya-dīpikā* about 300 years ago. He has been mentioned in the *Tarkabhāṣā*¹ by Yaśovijaya Gaṇi.²

122. The *Nyāya-dīpikā* begins with a salutation³ to Arhat Vardhamāna. It is divided into three chapters (*Prakāśa viz.*, (1) general characteristics of valid knowledge, *pramāṇa-sāmānya-lakṣaṇa*, (2) perception, *pratyakṣa*, and (3) indirect knowledge, *parokṣa*, including recollection, *smṛti*, recognition, *pratyabhijñāna*, argumentation, *tarka*, inference, *anumāna*, tradition, *āgama*, and the method of comprehending things from particular standpoints, *naya*.

123. The technical terms of logic have been defined and minutely examined and the views of other logicians, specially of the Buddhists, have been severely criticised. There are references to Sugata, Saugata, Bauddha, Tāthāgata, Mīmāṃsaka, Yauga, Naiyāyika, Bhāṭṭa, Prābhākara, Dignāga, Samanta Bhadra, Akalaṅka Deva, Śālikā Nātha, Jainendra, Syād vāda-vidyāpati, Māṇikya Nandi Bhāṭṭāraka, Kumāra Nandi Bhāṭṭāraka, Udayana and others. The following works are also mentioned :—*Prameya-kamala-mārtanda*, *Rājavārtika*, *Śloka-vārtika*, *Ślokavārtika-bhāṣya*, *Tattvārtha-sūtra*, *Tattvārtha-bhāṣya*, *Tattvārtha-sloka-vārtika*, *Āptamīmāṃsā-vivaraṇa*, *Nyāyavinīśaya*, *Pramāṇa-nirṇaya*, *Pramāṇa-parīkṣā*, *Parīkṣā-mukha*, *Nyāyabindu*, etc.

YAŚOVIJAYA GAṆI (1680 A.D.).

124. Yaśovijaya⁴ belonged to the *Svetāmbara* sect and was the famous author of *Nyāya-pradīpa*, *Tarkabhāṣā*, *Nyāya-rahasya*, *Nyāyāmṛta-taraṅgiṇī*, *Nyāya-khaṇḍa-khāḍya*, *Anekānta Jaina-mata-vyavasthā*, *Jñānabindu-prakaraṇa*, etc. He also wrote a commentary on the Digambara work *Aṣṭasāhasri*

¹ This work has been printed in Kolhāpura.

² इत्यं वा ज्ञाननिवर्तकत्वेन तर्कस्य प्रामाण्यं धर्मभूषयोक्तं सत्येव तच्च सिद्ध्याज्ञानद्वये व्यवच्छेदो संगच्छेत् ।

Yaśovijaya's *Tarkabhāṣā*, leaf 10, MSS. lent to me by Munis Dharmavijaya and Indravijaya.

³ श्रीवर्द्धमानमर्हन्तं नमो बालपुत्रये ।

विरच्यते सितसहस्र सन्दभन्यायदीपिका ॥ १ ॥

(*Nyāyadīpikā*, chap. I).

⁴ For other particulars about Yaśovijaya see Peterson 6, p. xiv. For his works see the *Jaināgama List* published in Bombay.

called *Aṣṭasāhasrī-vṛtti*. The *Tarkabhāṣā* begins with a salutation to Jina.¹ It consists of three chapters, *viz.* (1) Valid knowledge, *pramāṇa*, (2) Knowledge from particular stand-points, *naya*, and (3) Imposition, *niḥkṣepa*. He occasionally discusses *vyāptigraha*, or the means of establishing the universal connection between the middle term and the major term.

125. He is descended from Hiravijaya, the well-known Sūri of Akbar's time (no. 58 of the *Tapāgaccha paṭṭāvali*). He ascended heaven in Sāmvat 1745 or A.D. 1688 at Dabhoi, in modern Baroda State. To perpetuate his memory there has been established at Benares a college called *Jaina Yaśovijaya-pāṭhaśālā* under the auspices of which the sacred Jaina works are being published in a series called *Jaina Yaśovijaya-granthamālā*.

१ रेण्डुष्टन्दनतं नत्ता जिने तत्कार्यदेशिनम्

प्रसाधनयनिक्षेपैकैभावां तनोम्यदम्

(*Tarkabhāṣā*, chap. I).

BOOK II.

The Buddhist Logic.

CHAPTER I.

THE OLD BUDDHIST REFERENCES TO LOGIC.

BUDDHA GAUTAMA (623 B.C.—543 B.C.).

1. The Buddhists maintain that their religion is eternal. It was taught at different cycles by sages called Buddhas (the Enlightened Ones) or Tathāgatas (those who have realised the truth). In the present cycle, called *Mahā-bhadra-kalpa* (the very blessed cycle), four Buddhas are said to have already appeared, *viz.*, Krakucchanda, Kanaka Muni, Kāśyapa and Gautama, while the fifth, *viz.*, Maitreya, is yet to be born.¹

2. Of the past Buddhas the last, *viz.*, Buddha Gautama, otherwise called Sākya Muni, was born at Kapilavastu (modern Nigliwa in the Nepal Terai) in 623 B.C., and attained *nirvāṇa* at Kuśinagara (modern Kuśinārā near Gorakhpur) in 543 B.C.² He passed almost his whole life in Magadha (modern Behar). He is regarded by modern scholars as the real founder of Buddhism, while his predecessors are considered as purely mythical.

ORIGIN OF THE PĀLI BUDDHIST LITERATURE (543 B.C.—76 B.C.).

3. Buddha Gautama is said to have delivered his teachings in the Māgadhi or Pāli language. On his death these teachings were rehearsed by the Buddhist monks in three councils³ held

¹ *Vide* Hardy's Manual of Buddhism, second edition, pp. 88—91.

² The exact date of Buddha is unknown. The date given here is according to the Mahāvamsa, the Pāli chronicle of Ceylon. The date of Buddha's nirvāṇa is placed by European scholars between 470—480 B.C. Cf. Dr. Fleet's article on "The Date of Buddha's Death" in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January, 1904.

³ For an account of the first and second councils, *vide* Vinaya Pitaka, Culla Vagga, 11th and 12th Khandhakas, translated by Rhys Davids and

at Rājagṛha, Vaiśālī and Pāṭaliputra under the patronage of kings Ajātaśatru, Kālāśoka and Aśoka about the year 543 B.C., 443 B.C. and 255 B.C.¹ respectively. The texts of the teachings as discussed and settled in these councils form the sacred scripture of the Buddhists. This scripture is called in Pāli *Tepitaka* or *Piṭakattaya* and in Sanskrit *Tripitaka* or *Pitakatraya* which signifies 'Three Baskets.' It consists of the Sermon Basket (*Sutta Piṭaka*), Discipline Basket (*Vinaya Piṭaka*) and the Metaphysical Basket (*Abhidhamma Piṭaka*), each of which embodies a large number of distinct works.

4. The monks assembled in the First Council, that is in the Council of Kāśyapa in 543 B.C., were called (1) Theras, and the scripture canonised by them was called Theravāda. Subsequently ten thousand monks of Vaiśālī having violated certain rules of the Theravāda were, by the decision of the Second Council in 443 B.C., expelled from the community of the Theras. These excluded priests were called (2) Mahāsāṅghikas who were the first heretical sect of the Buddhists. They made certain additions and alterations in the Theravāda. Afterwards within two hundred years from the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha 14 other heretical sects² arose, viz., (3) Gokulika, (4) Ekabbohārika, (5) Paññatti, (6) Bāhulika, (7) Cetiya, (8) Sabbatthi, (9) Dhammaguttika, (10) Kassapiya, (11) Saṅkantika, (12) Sutta, (13) Himavata, (14) Rājagiriya, (15) Siddhatthika, (16) Pubbaseliya, (17) Aparaseliya and (18) Vajiriya.

5. Just at the close of the Third Council about 255 B.C., the teachings of Buddha as canonised by the Theras in the form of the *Tepitaka* were carried³ by Mahinda, son of Emperor Aśoka, to the island of Ceylon where they were perpetuated by priests in oral tradition. They are said to have been committed to writing⁴ for the first time in Ceylon in the reign of Vaṭṭagāmaṇi during 104-76 B.C. Besides the *Tepitaka* there

Oldenberg, S.B.E. series, vol. XX, pp. 370, 386. For an account of the third council as also of the first and second, *vide* Wijesimha's translation of the *Mahāvamsa*, chapter V, pp. 25-29, as also chapters III and IV.

¹ As to the dates of the 1st and 2nd Councils I follow the Pāli *Mahāvamsa*. The date of the 3rd Council is in accordance with modern researches. Aśoka ascended the throne in 272 B.C. (*Vide* Vincent A. Smith's *Aśoka*, p. 63), and it was in the 17th year of his reign that the third Council took place (*vide* Wijesimha's *Mahāvamsa*, p. 29).

² For a discussion about the variant names and subdivisions of these sects, *vide* Wijesimha's *Mahāvamsa*, part I, chapter V, p. 15; and Dr. Rhys Davids' "Schools of Buddhist Belief" in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, 1892, pp. 1-37.

³ *Vide* the *Mahāvamsa*, chapter XII.

⁴ *Vide* the *Mahāvamsa*, chapter XXXIII. Cf. also Dr. Alwis's *Lecture on the Pali Language in the Journal of the Pali Text Society*, London, 1883, p. 42.

were numerous other works written in Pāli which have immensely added to the bulk of the Pāli literature.

LOGIC TOUCHED ON IN THE PĀLI LITERATURE.

6. In the *Tepitaka*—nay in the whole Pāli literature—there is not a single treatise on Logic. This is not at all a matter of surprise, for, according to the Pāli works, our knowledge (called in Pāli: *Viññāna* and in Sanskrit: *Viññāna*) has arisen from *Avidyā*¹ or cosmic blindness, and is therefore a mere illusion. Such being the character of our knowledge, it cannot form the subject-matter of Logic, the sole function of which consists in laying down criteria for determining real or valid knowledge.

7. The only topic bearing upon Logic which has been touched on in the Pāli works, is the division of knowledge into six kinds. In the *Tepitaka*² knowledge (*Viññāna*³) has been classified as (1) ocular (*cakkhu-viññānam*), (2) auditory (*sota-viññānam*), (3) olfactory (*ghāṇa-viññānam*), (4) gustatory (*jivhā-viññānam*), (5) tactual (*kāya-viññānam*) and (6) mental (*mano-viññānam*). But this classification has not been carried far enough to lay the foundation of a Logic that deserved the name of science.

8. In the *Tepitaka* there are, however, occasional references to a class of men who were called *Takki* (in Sanskrit: *Tarkin* or *Takkika* (in Sanskrit: *Tarkika*)—that is, those versed in reasoning. It is not known whether these men were Buddhists, Jainas or Brāhmaṇas, perhaps they were recruited from all communities. They were not logicians in the proper sense of the term but they appear to me to have been sophists who indulged in quibble and casuistry.

THE Brahma-jāla-sutta (543 B.C.—255 B.C.).

9. In the *Brahma-jāla-sutta*, which forms a part of the *Digha Nikāya* of the *Sutta Piṭaka* and was rehearsed in the three Buddhist Councils during 543 B.C.—255 B.C.,⁴ mention

¹ *Avidyā* (cosmic blindness) forms the first link in the chain of *Paṭicca samuppāda* explained in the *Vinaya Piṭaka*, *Mahāvagga*, *Pathama Khandhaka*, translated by Rhys Davids and Oldenberg, S.B.E. series, vol. III, pp. 73—75.

² *Vide* the *Āṅguttara Nikāya* III, 61. 8, edited by Dr. Morris in the Pāli Text Society series of London. *Vide* also the *Dhammasaṅgī*, and compare *Pariecheda* IV of the *Abhidhammatthasaṅgaha* which, though not included in the *Tepitaka*, sums up the topics of the *Abhidhamma Piṭaka*.

³ *Viññāna* is translated as knowledge or consciousness, such as *cakkhu-viññāna* signifies ocular knowledge or eye-consciousness.

⁴ “Hofrath Dr. Bühler, in the last work he published, expressed the

is made of those *Sramanas* and *Brāhmanas* who were *Takki* and *Vimamsi* and indulged in *Takka* and *Vimamsā*. Buddha speaks of them thus :—

“In this case, brethren, some recluse or *Brāhmaṇa* is addicted to *logic* [sophism] and *reasoning* [casuistry].” He gives utterance to the following conclusion of his own, beaten out by his *argumentations* and based on his *sophistry*: “The soul and the world arose without a cause.”¹

This passage refers, in my opinion, to a sophist rather than to a teacher of Logic.

THE Udāna (543 B.C.—255 B.C.).

10. Again, in the *Udāna*, which is included in the *Khuddaka Nikāya* of the *Sutta Pitaka* and is supposed to have been rehearsed in the three Buddhist Councils during 543 B.C.—255 B.C., we read :—

“As long as the perfect Buddhas do not appear, the *Takkikas* [sophists] are not corrected nor are the *Sāvakas*: owing to their evil views they are not released from misery.”²

This passage leaves no doubt that the *Takkikas* were sophists.

THE Kathāvatthuppakaraṇa (ABOUT 255 B.C.

11. The *Kathāvatthuppakaraṇa*, a work of the *Abhidhamma-ṇaṭṭhaka*, composed by *Moggalliputta Tissa* at the Third Bud-

opinion that these books, as we have them in the Pāli, are good evidence, certainly for the fifth, probably for the sixth, century B.C.”

—Rhys Davids’ Preface to the Dialogues of the Buddha, p. XX.

¹ The *Brahma-jāla-sutta* 1—32 included in *Dialogues of the Buddha* translated by Rhys Davids, London, p. 42.

Dr. Rhys Davids translates *Takkī* (*Tarkī*) and *Vimamsī* (*Mīmāṃsī*) as “addicted to *logic* and *reasoning*.” But the expression may also be rendered as “addicted to *sophism* and *casuistry*.”

The original Pāli runs thus :—

Idha, bhikkhave, ekacco samaṇo vā brāhmaṇo vā takkī hoti vimamsī. So takka-pariyāhatuṃ vimamsānucaritaṃ sayam-paṭibhāṇaṃ evam āha : “Adhicca-samuppanno attā ca loko cāti.”

—The *Brahma-jāla-sutta* 1—32 included in the *Dīgha Nikāya*, p. 29, edited by T. W. Rhys Davids and J. E. Carpenter, London.

² The original of this passage runs as follows :—

Yāva sammā sambuddhā loka n’uppajjanti, na takkikā sujjhanti na c’āpi sāvakā, duddiṭṭhī na dukkhā paṇuccare’ti.

—*Udāna*, vi, 10, edited by Paul Steinthal in the *Pāli Text Society series*, London.

dhist Council during the reign of Aśoka about 255 B.C.,¹ mentions *paṭiññā* (in Sanskrit: *pratijñā*, proposition), *upanaya* (in Sanskrit, too: *upanaya*, application of reason), *niggaha* (in Sanskrit: *nigraha*, humiliation or defeat), etc.,² which are the technical terms of Logic. Though Moggaliputta Tissa has not made any actual reference to Logic, his mention of some of its technical terms warrants us to suppose that that science in some shape existed in India in his time about 255 B.C.

THE Milinda-pañha *alias* THE Bhikṣu-sūtra
(ABOUT 100 A.D.).

12. The only Pāli work in which an explicit reference to Logic called *Nīti* (or *Nyāya*) occurs is the *Milinda-pañha* otherwise known as the *Bhikṣu-sūtra*, which was composed about 100 A.D.³ It was translated into Chinese under the Eastern Tsin dynasty A.D. 317—420.⁴ In the Chinese collection of the Indian books it is designated as the *Nāgasena-Bhikṣu-sūtra*. This work contains questions of Milinda (the Greek King Menander of Bactria) and replies of Bhikṣu Nāga Sena on various abstruse matters. In it Milinda who was versed in Logic (*Nīti* or *Nyāya*) is thus described:—

¹ Aśoka ascended the throne of Magadha in 272 B.C. (*vide* Vincent A. Smith's *Aśoka*, p. 63). In the seventeenth year of his reign the Third Buddhist Council took place (Wijesinha's *Mahāvamsa*, p. 29).

² *Niggaha-catukkam* is the name of a section of the first chapter of the *Kathāvatthupparakāṇa*. *Upanaya-catukkam* is the name of another section of that work. A passage, in which the terms *paṭiññā* and *niggaha* occur, is quoted below:—

No ca mayam̐ tayā tattha hetāya paṭiññāya hevaṃ paṭijānantā hevaṃ niggahetabbo (*Kathāvatthupparakāṇa*, Siamese edition, p. 3, kindly lent to me by Anagārika H. Dharmapāla).

In the commentary on the above passage even *chala* (fraud), which is another technical term of Logic, has been used. *Cf.*

Evam̐ tona, chaloṇa niggaho ūropite idūṃ tass'eva paṭiññāya dhammena sainena attavāde jayam̐ dassetuṃ anulomanayo pucchā sakavādisa attano nissāya paṭiññāṃ paravādisa laddhīya kāsam̐ adatvā....

(*Kathāvatthupparakāṇa-atthakathā*, published by the Pali Text Society of London, p. 13).

It is evident from the opening passages of the *Kathāvatthupparakāṇa-atthakathā* that Moggaliputta Tissa discussed in the *Kathāvatthupparakāṇa* only those doctrines—Buddhist and heretic—which had originated after the First and Second Buddhist Councils. From this statement may we not draw the conclusion that the technical terms of Logic which he has used were unknown before the Second Buddhist Council?

³ For discussions about date *vide* Rhys Davids' Introduction to "the Questions of King Milinda" in the S. B. E. series, vol. xxxv.

⁴ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjo's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, No. 1358.

∴ "Many were the arts and sciences he knew—holy tradition and secular law: the Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika systems of philosophy; arithmetic; music; medicine; the four Vedas, the Purāṇas, and the Itihāsas; astronomy, magic, causation and spells; the art of war; poetry; conveyancing—in a word, the whole nineteen.

As a disputant he was hard to equal, harder still to overcome; the acknowledged superior of all the founders of the various schools of thought. And as in wisdom so in strength of body, swiftness, and valour there was found none equal to Milinda in all India. He was rich, too, mighty in wealth and prosperity, and the number of his armed hosts knew no end. The king, who was fond of wordy disputation, and eager for discussion with *casuists*, *sophists*, and gentry of that sort, looked at the sun (to ascertain the time), and then said to his ministers."¹

13. The following dialogue between Milinda and Nāga Sena is quoted to show what was thought to be the proper mode of carrying on debate in the days of those notable persons:—

“The King said: ‘Reverend Sir, will you discuss with me again?’

‘If your Majesty will discuss as a scholar (Paṇḍita), well; but if you will discuss as a king, no.’

‘How is it then that scholars discuss?’

‘When scholars talk a matter over with one another then is there a winding up, an unravelling; one or other is convicted of error, and he then acknowledges his mistake, distinctions are drawn, and contra distinctions; and yet thereby they are not angered. Thus do scholars, O King, discuss.’

‘And how do kings discuss?’

‘When a king, Your Majesty, discusses a matter, and he advances a point, if any one differ from him on that point, he is apt to fine him, saying: “Inflict such and such a punishment upon that fellow!” Thus, Your Majesty, do kings discuss.’

‘Very well. It is as a scholar, not as a king, that I will discuss. Let Your Reverence talk unrestrainedly, as you would with a brother, or a novice, or a lay disciple, or even with a servant. Be not afraid!’

ORIGIN OF THE MAHĀYĀNA (ABOUT 78 A.D.).

14. At the opening of the Christian era the north-western part of India was invaded by the Turuṣkas or Scythians. Kaniṣka,² who was one of their chiefs, conquered Kāśmīra,

¹ Taken from Rhys Davids' translation of the Milinda-pañha called "the Questions of King Milinda" in S. B. E. series, vol. xxxv, pp. 6-7. Nyāya is an equivalent for the original Nīti, causation for Hetu, casuists for Lokāyata and sophists for Vītandā.

Nīti may mean "polity," but placed between Yoga and Vaiśeṣika it cannot but signify Nyāya.

² Vide Rhys Davids' Questions of King Milinda in the S. B. E. series, vol. xxxv, p. 46.

³ In the Tangyur, Mdo, vol. Gi, there is Mahārāja-Kanika-lekha, which is a letter addressed by Maticitra to King Kaniṣka. Hwen-thsang in the 7th Century A.D. records a prophecy of Buddha that 400 years after his nirvāṇa Kaniṣka would be born: vide Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, p. 99. The same prophecy is mentioned by Fa-hian about 399 A.D., showing thereby that Kaniṣka was regarded as historical even at that time. According to Tibetan books such as the

Palhava and Delhi, and is said to have founded the era called *Sakābda* in 78 A.D. He accepted the Buddhist faith and established a new system of Buddhism called *Mahāyāna*,¹ the Great Vehicle. The old system of Buddhism as promulgated in the Pāli *Tepitāka* was henceforth nicknamed *Hīnayāna*, the Little Vehicle. The *Mahāyāna* gradually spread to Nepal, Tibet, Mongolia, China, Japan, Corea, etc., while the *Hīnayāna* continued in Ceylon and thence spread to Burmah, Siam, etc. In India both the systems prevailed.

ORIGIN OF THE SANSKRIT BUDDHIST LITERATURE (ABOUT 78 A.D.).

15. Under the patronage of Kaniska a council² was held at Jālandhara under the superintendence of Pārśva (or Pūrṇaka) and Vasu Mitra. It consisted of 500 monks who composed in Sanskrit three works explanatory of the Pāli *Tepitāka*, viz., *Sūtra Upadeśa* of the *Sūtra Pitāka*, *Vinaya Vibhāṣā* of the *Vinaya Pitāka* and *Abhidharma Vibhāṣā* of the *Abhidhamma Pitāka*. These three works written in Sanskrit were the earliest canonical books of the *Mahāyāna* School.

16. It must not, however, be supposed that there had been no Buddhist books written in Sanskrit before Kaniska held his council. As a fact Kaniska thought it expedient to introduce Sanskrit as the medium of Buddhist communication seeing that there had already existed many valuable Buddhist books in that language. For instance, the *Abhidharma-vibhāṣā*, or rather the *Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā-sāstra*, which was compiled

Sum-pāhi-choṣ-byun, Kan'ka flourished in 33 B.C., that is, 400 years after the nirvāṇa of Buddha which is said to have taken place in 433 B.C. Dr. J. F. Fleet holds that Kaniska founded the Vikrama era in 58 B.C. (*vide* Traditional Date of Kaniska in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, October 1906). Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar places Kaniska at the last quarter of the 3rd century A.D., as appears from "A peep into the early history of India" in the Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1897-98, p. 396. Vincent A. Smith places Kaniska in 125 A.D., while Sylvain Lévi assigns him an earlier date of 50 A.D. (*vide* J.R.A.S., January 1905, pp. 52-53). But Mr. Beal, Mr. Lassen, Professor Korn and others adopt the view that the Saka era dates from Kaniska in 78 A.D.

¹ *Vide* Takakusu's I-tsing, p. XXV; also Satis Chandra Vidyābhūṣana's *Mahāyāna* and *Hīnayāna* in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1900.

² An account of this council is given by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E., in an article named "Some Historical facts connected with the rise and progress of Mahāyāna School of Buddhism, translated from the Sum-pāhi-choṣ-byun" in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. I, part III, p. 18. *Vide* also Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 275; and also Monier Williams' Buddhism, pp. 68-69.

at the council of Kaniska was a mere commentary on Kātyāyāni-putra's Abhidharma-jñāna-prasthāna-sāstra.¹ This last is a Sanskrit work explanatory of the Pāli Abhidhamma Piṭaka. It was composed 300 years after the nirvāṇa of Buddha or 100 years before the time of Kaniska. Though Kaniska was not thus the first founder of the Sanskrit Buddhist literature, it cannot but be acknowledged that it was he, who for the first time proclaimed Sanskrit as the language of the Buddhist Canon. Since his time there have been composed innumerable Buddhist works in Sanskrit of which nine called the *Nava Dharmas* ² are specially worshipped by the Mahāyāna Buddhists.

LOGIC MENTIONED IN THE SANSKRIT BUDDHIST LITERATURE.

17. None ³ of the works composed during or before the time of Kaniska has come down to us in its Sanskrit original, and I have had no opportunity of examining the Chinese or Tibetan version of the same. I cannot, therefore, say whether there is any mention of Logic in those works. But we have before us a very large collection of Sanskrit Buddhist works composed after the time of Kaniska. Many of these works, such as some of the *Nava Dharmas*, contain references to Logic, and several works are even replete with logical discussions.

THE Lalitavistara (BEFORE 250 A.D.).

18. The *Lalitavistara*, which is one of the *Nava Dharmas*, was translated into Chinese in 221-263 A.D.⁴ The Sanskrit original of it must have been prepared in India before that

¹ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, nos. 1263, 1273 and 1275. Regarding the authorship of Abhidharma mahāvibhāṣā, or simply Mahāvibhāṣā, vide Takakusu in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, p. 159.

² The *Nava Dharmas* or Nine Sacred Works are :—

(1) Aṣṭa-sāhasrikā Prajñāpāramitā, (2) Gaṇḍa-vyūha, (3) Daśa-bhūmī-ara, (4) Samādhi-rāja, (5) Laṅkāvatāra, (6) Saddharma-puṇḍarīka, (7) Tathāgata-guhyaka, (8) Lalitavistara and (9) Suvarṇa-prabhāsa.

Vide Hodgson's Illustrations of the Literature and Religion of the Buddhists, p. 19.

³ Dr. Rhys Davids in his Buddhist India, p. 316, observes that the three works composed at the Council of Kaniska are extant in European libraries.

⁴ The *Lalitavistara* was translated into Chinese four times. The first and third translations were lost by 730 A.D. The first was prepared under the Han dynasty A.D. 221-263, the second under the Western Tsin dynasty A.D. 265-316, the third under the earlier Suñ dynasty A.D. 420-479, and the fourth under the Thān dynasty A.D. 683. Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, nos. 159 and 160.

time. In this work Logic, under the name of *Hetu-vidyā*,¹ is mentioned along with the Sāṃkhya, Yoga, Vaiśeṣika, etc., in all of which the Bodhisattva (Buddha Gautama) is said to have acquired distinction.

EIGHTEEN SECTS OF THE BUDDHISTS.

19. In article 4 we have found that within 200 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha there arose in India 17 heretical sects besides the orthodox priesthood called the Theras. In course of time some of these sects disappeared while new ones grew up, the result being that at the time of Kaṇiṣka, about 78 A.D., the Buddhists had already been divided into 18 sects³ grouped into four classes as follows:—

- | | | |
|--|---|--|
| <p>I. Ārya Sarvāstivāda</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> (1) Mūla Sarvāstivāda (2) Kāśyapiya (3) Mahīśāsaka (4) Dharma-guptiya (5) Bahusrutiya (6) Tāmraśāṭīya (7) Vibhajjavādin <p>II. Ārya Sammitiya</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> (8) Kurukullaka (9) Āvantika (10) Vātsīputriya <p>III. Ārya Mahāsāṃghika</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> (11) Pūrva-śāila (12) Aparā-śāila (13) Haimavata (14) Lokottaravādīn (15) Prajñāptivādīn <p>IV. Ārya Sthāvira</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> (16) Mahāvihāra (17) Jetavanīya, and (18) Abhayagiri-vāsīn. | } | <p>Belonging to the
<i>Vaiśbhāṣika</i> School
of Philosophy.</p> |
| | } | <p>Belonging to the
<i>Sautrāntika</i> School
of Philosophy.</p> |

All the sects mentioned above belonged to the *Hīnayāna* though later on they joined the *Mahāyāna* too.

१. निर्वधेयौ निगमे पुराणे इतिहासे वेदे व्याकरणे निबन्धे शिक्षायां कन्दसि
यज्ञकल्पे ज्योतिषि सांख्ये योगे क्रियाकल्पे वैशेषिके वैशिके चार्थविद्यायां चार्थसत्ये
चार्थस्य चासुरे स्वर्गपक्षिभते हेतुविद्यायां जतुयन्त्रे सर्वत्र बोधिसत्त्व एव
विप्रश्रयते स्म ॥

Lalitavistara, edited by Dr. Rājendra Lal Mitra in the Bibliotheca Indica series, Calcutta, Chapter XII, p. 179.

² *Vide* the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. I.

FOUR SCHOOLS OF THE BUDDHIST PHILOSOPHY.

20. The philosophical views of the sects mentioned above were gradually formulated into two schools, viz., the (1) *Vaiḥhāsika* and (2) *Sautrāntika*. The Mahāyāna sect of the Buddhists founded by Kaniska established two other schools of philosophy, viz., the (3) *Mādhyamika* and *Yogācāra*. So there were altogether four schools of philosophy, two of the *Hīnayāna* and two of the *Mahāyāna*.¹

21. *Vaiḥhāsika* was a later appellation of the philosophy of the Sarvāstivāda (Pali : Sabbatthivāda) sect² who, as their name implies, admitted the reality of the world—internal and external. The fundamental philosophical work of this sect is Kātyāyana-putra's Abhidharmajñāna-prasthāna-śāstra,³ or simply Jñāna-prasthāna-śāstra, composed 300 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha. The next work of this sect is the Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā-śāstra⁴ or simply Vibhāṣā, compiled at the council of Kaniska about 78 A.D. It is from this *Vibhāṣā* that the name *Vaiḥhāsika*⁵ was derived. *Vibhāṣā* means "commentary" and the *Vaiḥhāsika* philosophy seems to have been so called because it was based on the commentaries rather than on the original texts of the teachings of Buddha. Saṅghabhadra's Nyāyānusāra-śāstra,⁶ otherwise called Koṣa-kāraka-śāstra, composed about 489 A.D.,⁷ is a most learned work of the *Vaiḥhāsika* philosophy.

part III, p. 18; Takakusu's I-tsing, pp. xxiii, xxiv and xxv; Rhys Davids' article in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, 1891, p. 411, and 1892, pp. 1-37; Rockhill's Buddha, p. 181 f; Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 270-274; and Wijesimha's Mahāvamsa, part I, Chapter V, p. 15.

¹ Vide Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, pp. 121, 139 n; and Takakusu's I-tsing, p. xxii.

² Vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. xxi. The Ārya Sainmitīyas, at any rate their subclass called the Vātsīputrīyas, were also followers of the *Vaiḥhāsika* philosophy. The Hindu philosopher Vācaspati Miśra in his Nyāya vārtika-tātparyatikā 3-1-1 quotes the opinions of the *Vaiḥhāsikas* who were called Vātsīputras.

³ This work exists in Chinese and Tibetan: vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, nos. 1273, 1275.

⁴ This work, too, exists in Chinese and Tibetan: vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, nos. 1263, 1264.

⁵ Compare the explanation of *Vaiḥhāsika* given by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in his Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha, chapter on Baudha-darśana, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 24. Vide also Satis Chandra Vidyābhūṣana's "Mādhyamika School" in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta for 1895, part II, p. 4.

⁶ This work exists in Chinese and Tibetan; vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, no. 1265.

⁷ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Appendix II, no. 95. For Saṅgha-bhadra, vide also Hwen-thsang's Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, pp. 193-194.

22. The name *Sautrāntika*¹ was derived from *Sūtrānta*, called in Pāli *Suttanta*, meaning "original text." The *Sautrāntika* philosophy seems to have been so called because it was based on the original text of the teachings of Buddha rather than on the commentaries thereon. The text on which the *Sautrāntika* philosophy was based belonged to the sect of Ārya Sthaviras, called in Pāli Theras, who held the First Council in 543 B.C., and possibly also to the sect of the Mahāsāṃghikas² who were the first dissenters in 443 B.C. The philosophical principles of this school are said to have been formulated in Kāśmīra³ during the reign of Kanīṣka about 78 A.D. by a sage named Dharmotara or Uttara-dharma.⁴ But the Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang, who visited India early in the 7th century A. D., states that the renowned teacher Kumāralabdha⁵ of Takṣaśilā (Taxila in the Punjab) was the founder of the *Sautrāntika* school and wrote several very valuable treatises on it. He is supposed to have lived about 300 A.D. as he was a contemporary of Nāgārjuna (q. v.), Ārya Deva (q. v.) and Āśvaghōṣa. There was another very famous teacher named Śrīlabdha⁶ who wrote *Vibhāṣā-sāstra* (or commentary on a work) of the *Sautrāntika* school. Hwen-thsang saw in Ayodhyā the ruins of a Saughārāma where Śrīlabdha resided.

MENTION OF LOGIC IN THE WORKS OF THESE SCHOOLS.

23. As none of the old works belonging to the *Vaiśbhāṣika* or *Sautrāntika* school has yet become accessible to us, I cannot state whether there is any mention of Logic in those works. But there are ample references to Logic in the works of the *Mādhyamika* and *Yogācāra* schools, short accounts of which are given below.

¹ Compare the explanation of the term *Sautrāntika* given by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in the *Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha*, chapter on Bauddha-darśana, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 26. Vide also Satīs Chandra Vidyābhūṣana's "Mādhyaṃika School" in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta* for 1895, part II, p. 4. Vide Rhys Davids' *Buddhist India*, p. 168, and Beal's *Fahian and Sungyun*, p. 143.

² Vide Watters "On Yuan Chwang," vol. II, p. 161.

³ Vide the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, vol. I, part III, pp. 18, 19; and Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 59.

⁴ For the Dhammuttariya sect, vide Wassilief's *Buddhism*, p. 233; and Mahāvamsa, part I, chapter V, p. 15, Wijesimha's foot-note.

⁵ Vide Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. II, p. 302; and Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 78, where Kumāralabdha stands for Kumāra-labdha.

⁶ Vide Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. I, pp. 225, 226; and Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 67.

ĀRYA NĀGĀRJUNA (ABOUT 300 A.D.).

24. The name *Mādhyamika* was derived from *madhyama*, meaning the middle. The *Mādhyamika* philosophy was so called because it avoided two extremes, *i.e.*, advocated neither the theory of absolute reality, nor that of total unreality, of the world, but chose a *middle path*,¹ inculcating that the world had only a conditional existence. The founder of this school was Nāgārjuna or rather Ārya Nāgārjuna, who was born at Vidarbha (modern Berar) in Mahākośala,² during the reign of King Sadvāha or Sātavāha³ [of the Andhra dynasty].⁴ He passed many of his days in meditation in a cave-dwelling of the Sri-parvata,⁵ that bordered on the river Krishnā. He was a pupil of Śāraha and is said to have converted a powerful king, named Bhoja Deva,⁶ to Buddhism.

¹ Compare—

अतो भावाभावात्तद्वयवहितत्वात् सर्वसंभावानुपपत्तिरस्यैवा शून्यता मध्यमा
प्रतिपक्षधर्मो मार्ग इत्युच्यते ॥

—*Mādhyamikā Vṛtti* published by the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, chapter XXIV, p. 185.

Compare the explanation of the term *Mādhyamika* given by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya, in the *Sarvadarśana-saṅgraha*, chapter on *Bauddha darśana*, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 24; and also Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *History of the Mādhyamika Philosophy of Nāgārjuna* in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, 1897, part IV, pp. 7-20.

² *Vide* Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. II, Book VIII, p. 97, and Book X, p. 210; Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. II, pp. 201-202; and Wassiljew quoted by Schiefner in the *Geschichte des Buddhismus*, p. 301.

³ Sadvāha is the same as Sātavāha, which is a general name of the kings of the Andhra dynasty.—*Vide* Dr. R. G. Bhandarkar's *Early History of the Dekkan*, second edition, pp. 25-37.

Nāgārjuna wrote an instructive letter to Sātavāha[na], whose private name in Chinese was Sh'-yen-tōh-cia. This letter is called *Ārya Nāgārjuna Bodhisattva Suhrlekha*. It was translated into Chinese in 434 A.D. An English translation of this letter has appeared in the *Journal of the Pali Text Society of London*, 1883, pp. 71-75.

⁴ The Andhra kings ruled the northern portion of the Madras Presidency and the whole of Kalinga, and overthrew the Kanva dynasty in northern India about 31 B.C. They remained powerful up to 436 A.D. They were Buddhists, and it was by them that the magnificent marble stūpa at Amarāvati was erected.—*Vide* Sewell's *Lists of Antiquities in Madras*, vol. II, pp. 141-146.

⁵ For an account of Sri-parvata or Sri-saila see Hwen-thsang's *Life, Introduction*, p. xi, by Beal; *Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 84; Wilson's *Mālatī-Mādhava*, act I; and Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Notes on Ratnāvali*, pp. 27-29.

⁶ *Vide* *Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 66, 69-73.

25. Nāgārjuna is said to have lived four hundred years¹ after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha, that is, in 33 B.C. But he does not appear to me to have so early a date as he was one of the early patrons or founders of the university of Nālandā,² which had not, perhaps, come into existence in the 1st century B.C., and was insignificant³ even at 399 A.D., when the Chinese pilgrim Fa-hian came to visit India. Nāgārjuna is stated by Lama Tārānātha to have been a contemporary of King Nemi Candra, who is supposed to have reigned about 300 A.D.⁴ The

¹ It is prophesied in the Mañju-śrī-mūla-tantra (called in Tibetan *Ujam-dpal-rtsa-rgyud*) that :—

དེ་བཞིན་གཤམས་པ་ང་འདས་ནས།

ལོ་ནི་བཞི་བརྒྱ་ལོ་ན་པ་ན།

དགོ་སྤོང་ཁྱུ་ཞེས་དེ་འབོད་འབྱུང་།

བསྟན་པ་ལ་ནི་དང་ཅིང་པན།

(Quoted in the Introduction to *Sez-rab-sdon-bu* published in Calcutta).

“Four hundred years after Buddha’s departure from the world there will appear a Bhikṣu, named Nāgārjuna, who will do good to the believers in the doctrine.”

It should be noted that according to some books of Tibet, Buddha was born in 514 B.C., lived 81 years and attained *nirvāṇa* in 433 B.C. Nāgārjuna, who was born 400 years after the *nirvāṇa*, must, at this calculation, be placed in 33 B.C.

² *Vide* Tārānātha’s *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 66, 69-73.

³ Fahian describes Nālandā as a mere village *Nā-lo*: *vide* Beal’s *Travels of Fahian and Sungyun*, p. 111.

⁴ According to Lama Tārānātha, Nāgārjuna was a contemporary of King Nemi Candra, whose genealogy is thus traced :—

Akṣa Candra	}	• Ruled in Aparāntaka.
Jaya Candra		
Nemi Candra		
Phaṇi Candra	}	Ruled in Magadha.
Bhaṁsa Candra		
Sāla Candra		
Candra Gupta		

The six kings, beginning with Akṣa Candra to Sāla Candra, are stated to have been weak and insignificant, while Candra Gupta, the seventh king,

latest date that can be assigned to Nāgārjuna is 401 A.D.,¹ when his biography was translated into Chinese by Kumārajīva.

26. Nāgārjuna's *Mādhyamika-kārikā* is the first work of the *Mādhyamika* philosophy. In it he has occasionally referred to certain technicalities of Logic, such as the fallacy of *Sādhya-sama*² (*petitio principii*) in chapter IV. He was the author of several other works³ on the *Mādhyamika* philosophy, such as the (1) *Yukti-śaṣṭikā kārikā* or sixty memorial verses on argumentation, (2) *Vigraha-vyavartanī kārikā*, or memorial verses on conquering disputes, and (3) *Vigraha-vyavartanī vṛtti* or a commentary on the *Vigraha-vyavartanī kārikā*.⁴ In these works he has, as the titles indicate, largely employed the methods of Logic⁵ to establish the abstruse conclusions of the *Mādhyamika* philosophy.

ĀRYA DEVA (ABOUT 320 A.D.).

27. Deva⁶ or rather Ārya Deva was the next writer on the *Mādhyamika* philosophy. He is otherwise known as Karṇaripa,

is described as having been very powerful. This Candrar Gupta, who "did not take refuge in Buddha," may be the same who founded the Gupta era in 319 A.D. The reigns of his predecessors were very short. Nemi Candrar may be assigned to about 300 A.D.—Cf. Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 80-83.

¹ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Appendix I, No. 3.

² The *Mādhyamika-kārikā* with the *vṛtti* of Candrar Kīrti has been published by the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta; the work is being republished in the St. Petersburg Buddhist Text series under the editorship of Professor De La Vallée Poussin. The following verse refers to the fallacy of *Sādhya-sama* :—

विप्रक्षेपः परीक्षारं कृते शून्यतया वदेत् ।

सर्वं तस्यापरिहृतं समं साध्येन जायते ॥

(*Mādhyamika-kārikā*, chapter IV).

³ For an account of some of the works on the Tantra by Nāgārjuna, vide Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's Introduction to the *Sragdharastotra* in the "Bibliotheca Indica" series. For the latest researches in the medical works of Nāgārjuna, see Dr. Palmyr Cordier's "Introduction A L'Etude des Traites Medicaux Sanscritas" printed in Hanoi, 1903; and for his hymns such as धर्मधातुसख, निरुपमसख etc., vide Tangyur, Batodpa, vol. Ka.

⁴ For an account of these works, vide the article "Indian Logic as preserved in Tibet, No. 3," by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, new series, vol. III, No. 7, 1907. For the philosophical works of Nāgārjuna, see Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Appendix I, no. 3.

⁵ The Nyāya-dvaira-tarka-śāstra, as noticed in Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Nos. 1223, 1224, is not a work of Nāgārjuna but of Dignāga.

⁶ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Appendix

Kāṇa Deva, Nīla-netra and Piṅgala-netra. He was born in Southern India and was an eminent disciple of Nāgārjuna. According to Hwen-thsang,¹ he visited the countries of Mahā-kośala, Śrughna, Prayāga, Coṣa and Vaiśālī, in all of which he won great renown by defeating the Tīrthikas and preaching the true doctrines of Buddha. According to Lama Tārānātha,² Deva resided for a long time in Nālandā, where he was a Paṇḍita. He flourished during the reign of Candragupta, whose date is supposed to be about 320 A.D.³ The latest date that can be assigned to Deva is 401 A.D.,⁴ when his biography was translated into Chinese by Kumārajīva. He wrote numerous works on the *Mādhyamika* philosophy, such as the *Śāntaka-śāstra*, *Bhrama-pramathana-yukti-hetu-siddhi*,⁵ etc., all of which bear evidences of his knowledge of Logic.

LOGIC OF THE YOGĀCĀRA SCHOOL (ABOUT 300-500 A.D.).

28. The word *Yogācāra* is compounded of *yoga* meaning 'meditation' and *ācāra* meaning 'practice.' The *Yogācāra*⁶ or the contemplative system was so called because it emphasised the practice of meditation as means of attaining *Bhūmis*⁷ or the seventeen stages of Buddhistic Perfection. The chief dogma established in it is *ālaya-vijñāna*,⁸ the basis of conscious states,

I, No. 4; and Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 321, vol. II, pp. 225-226.

¹ Vide Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. I, Book IV, pp. 186-190, Book V, p. 231; vol. II, Book X, pp. 210, 227, Book XII, p. 302, Book VIII, pp. 98-102.

² Vide Lama Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 83-86 and 93.

³ Vide foot-note 4, p. 69.

⁴ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 4.

⁵ Vide Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Indian Logic as preserved in Tibet No. 3" in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, new series, vol. III, No. 7, 1907.

⁶ The *Yogācāra* philosophy is generally known in China, Tibet and Nepal as *Yugācārya*. For an account of this system, vide Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 356; Dr. Schlagintweit's Buddhism quoted in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta for 1895, part II, Appendix IV.

Compare explanation of the word *Yogācāra* given by the Hindu Philosopher Mādhavācārya in the Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha, chapter on Bauddha darśana, translated by Cowell and Gough, second edition, p. 24. Vide also Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "The Mādhyamika School" in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, 1895, part II, p. 4.

⁷ Vide Dharma-saṃgraha, LXIV and LXV, edited by Max Müller and Wenzel.

⁸ For an explanation of *ālaya-vijñāna*, see Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's note on p. 2 of the Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra, Calcutta Buddhist Text Society's edition, and also see p. 45 of the same work.

which is the same as our 'ego' or 'soul.' It is not known who was the founder of the *Yogācāra* school, but in the Tibetan and Chinese books the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, *Mahāsamaya Sūtra*, *Bodhisattva-caryā-nirdeśa* and the *Sapta-daśabhūmi-śāstra-yogācārya* have been named as the prominent old works of the system.¹

THE *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra* (ABOUT 300 A.D.).

29. The *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*² is a very sacred work as it is one of the *Nava Dharmas*. The exact date of it is unknown, beyond the fact that it was translated into Chinese in 443 A.D.³ The approximate date seems to be 300 A.D., for, it existed at or before the time of Ārya Deva who mentions it.⁴ This work speaks in a prophetic style of the *Naiyāyikas* (dialecticians) and *Tārkiikas* (logicians). Thus in chapter II of the work *Mahāmāti* asks Buddha :—

“Say how in the time to come *Naiyāyikas* will flourish ?”⁵

¹ *Vide* Section Mdo of the Tangyur ; Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 111 f ; Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, Appendix I, No. 1 ; Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. I, p. 226, vol. II, pp. 220, 275 ; and Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. I, p. 371.

² The Sanskrit original of this work is being published by the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta under the editorship of Rai Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E., and Dr. Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana. The work also exists in Chinese and Tibetan. Hwen-thsang mentions the *Laṅkāvatāra*, *vid'* Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Book XI, p. 251.

Vide an account of the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra* by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, 1906.

³ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, nos. 175, 176 and 177.

⁴ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, nos. 1259, 1260 and Appendix I, no. 4.

⁵ The Sanskrit original runs as follows :—

नैययिकाः कथं भूवि भविष्यन्ति अनागततः ।

(*Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, Asiatic Society of Bengal's MSS., chapter II, leaf 11).

The Tibetan version runs thus :—

སྡེ་བ་རྣམས་ཀྱང་རི་ལྗ་བྱུར།

མ་འོངས་དུས་ན་འབྱུང་བ་གསུངས།

(Kangyur, Mdo, vol. V, Asiatic Society of Bengal's xylograph).

“How is *tarka* (reasoning or argumentation) corrected, and how is it carried on?”¹

Again in chapter X of the work we read:—

“Whatever is produced is destructible: this is the conclusion of the *Tārkikas*.”²

MAITREYA (ABOUT 400 A.D.).

30. The date of the *Mahāsamaya-sūtra*³ is not known. The *Bodhisattva-caryā-nirdeśa* was translated into Chinese during 414–421 A.D. and the *Sapta-daśa-bhūmi-śāstra-yogācārya* in 646–647 A.D. The author of these two works was Maitreya⁴ (called in Chinese ‘Mirok’), who lived 900 years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha, that is about 400 A.D.⁵ He is reported by Hwen-thsang to have communicated the materials of three Buddhist treatises to Ārya Asanga while the latter was residing in a monastery in Ayodhyā.⁶ In the *Sapta-daśa-bhūmi-śāstra-yogācārya*⁷ Maitreya has discussed certain topics of Logic, a

¹ कथं हि युज्यते तर्कः कथं तर्कः प्रवर्तते ।

(*Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, chapter II, leaf 11, A.S.B. MSS.)

རི་ལྷ་ར་རྟོག་གི་རྣམ་དག་འགྱུར།

རྟོག་གི་ཅི་ཡི་སྒྲུང་དུ་འགྱུར།

(Kangyur, *Mdo*, vol. V.)

² छनकस्य विनाशः स्यात् तार्किकाणामयं नयः ।

(*Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*, chapter X, leaf 143, A.S.B. MSS.)

གུས་ན་རྣམ་པར་འཛིག་པར་འགྱུར།

འདི་ནི་རྟོག་གི་ཅན་གྱི་ཚུལ།

(Kangyur, *Mdo*, vol. V.)

³ Vide Dr. Schlagintweit's Buddhism quoted in the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, 1895, part II, Appendix IV, p. 16.

⁴ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Appendix I, No. 1.

⁵ Vide “Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan,” by Dr. Sugiura, p. 30.

⁶ Vide Watters' “On Yuan Chwang,” Vol. I, pp. 355–56. The three treatises are:—*Saptadaśabhūmiśāstra-yogācārya*, *Sūtrālaṅkāraṭīkā* and *Madhyānta vibhāga śāstra*.

⁷ It is perhaps this work which is called *Yoga* by Dr. Sugiura, vide its Chinese version Yuka Ron, Book XV.

short account of which is given below from the researches of Dr. Sugiura.¹

31. Maitreya mainly discussed the practical questions of Logic as is evident from the titles of some of the chapters of his work, viz.: (1) Of Kinds of Debate, (2) Of Occasions of Debate, (3) Of the Attributes of the Debator, (4) Of Defeat, etc. But occasionally there was mixed in with the discussions some Pure Logic too. A thesis [*pratijñā*], according to Maitreya, is to be supported by a reason [*hetu*] and two examples [*dṛṣṭānta*]. Validity of the reason and of the examples requires that they be based either (1) on fact [*pratyakṣa*], (2) on another inference [*anumāna*], or (3) on holy saying [*āgama*]. Analogy or Comparison [*upamāna*] is omitted. The form of reasoning is illustrated as follows :—

1. Sound is non-eternal,
2. Because it is a product,
3. Like a pot, but not like ether [*ākāśa*],
4. A product like a pot is non-eternal,
5. Whereas, an eternal thing like ether is not a product.

ĀRYA ASAṄGA (ABOUT 450 A.D.).

32. Asaṅga,² called in Chinese Mucak, was born in Gāndhāra (modern Peshwar). He was at first an adherent of the Mahīśāsaka³ sect and followed the *Vaibhāṣika* philosophy of the *Hīnayāna*. Later on he became a disciple of Maitreya and adopted the *Yogācāra* philosophy of the *Mahāyāna*. He is said to have lived for some years as a paṇḍita in Nālandā.⁴ He lived about 450 A.D.⁵ The latest date that can be assigned to him is 531 A.D.,⁶ when one of his works, called the *Mahāyāna-samparigraha-śāstra*, was translated into Chinese. Hwen-thsang in the 7th century A.D. saw the ruins of *Sanghārāmas* in Kauśāmbi and Ayodhyā, where Asaṅga resided for some years.⁷ He wrote 12 works, most of which still exist in Chinese and Tibetan versions.⁸

¹ Vide "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," p. 30.

² Vide Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Vol. I, pp. 98, 227 and 236.

³ Vide Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," Vol. I, p. 357.

⁴ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 122.

⁵ Asaṅga is approximately placed at 450 A.D. as he was the eldest-brother of Vasubandhu (q.v.) who lived about 480 A.D.

⁶ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka*, Appendix I, No. 5.

⁷ See Beal's *Buddhist Records*, Vol. I, pp. 98, 227, 236.

⁸ Vide Bunyiu Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka*, Appendix I, no. 5.

33. Dr. Sugiura¹ has ascertained from Chinese sources that Asaṅga treated Logic in the tenth volume of *Genyo*, in which he simply reproduced the conclusions of his master Maitreya, and also in the sixteen volumes of *Zaschuh*, in which he showed a slight originality. Asaṅga's form of reasoning, which is somewhat different from Maitreya's, is given below :—

1. Sound is non-eternal,
2. Because it is a product,
3. Like a pot (but not like ether) ;
4. Because a pot is a product it is non-eternal ; so is sound. as it is a product :
5. Therefore we know sound is non-eternal.

Here we find that Asaṅga made some improvement on the form of syllogism adopted in the Logic of his master. The basis of Maitreya's inference, so far as it related to the connection between "produced-ness" and "non-eternality," was a mere analogy founded upon a single instance. This connection (between "produced-ness" and "non-eternality" in the case of the pot) might be accidental. Asaṅga emphasised the essential connection between "produced-ness" and "non-eternality" by saying "Because a pot is a product, it is non-eternal." In so doing he appealed not merely to an instance but to a *law*.

VASUBANDHU (ABOUT 480 A.D.).

34. Vasubandhu,² called in Chinese Seish, was born in Gāndhāra (modern Peshwar), where a tablet to his memory was seen by Hwen-thsang in the 7th century A.D. His father's name was Kauśika. He began his career as a *Vai-bhāṣika* philosopher of the Sarvāstivāda sect, but was later converted by his eldest brother Asaṅga to the *Yogācāra* school of the *Mahāyāna*. He passed many years of his life in Sākala, Kauśāmbi and Ayodhyā, in the last of which places he died at the age of eighty years. He was a friend of Manoratha, a master of the *Vai-bhāṣika* Śāstra, who flourished in the middle of the thousand years after the *nirvāṇa* of Buddha, that is before 500 A.D. He was a contemporary of another *Vai-bhāṣika*

The original Sanskrit text of Asaṅga's *Vajracchedikā* has been published in the *Anecdota Oxoniensia* edited by Professor Max Müller.

¹ Vide "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan" by Dr. Sugiura, p. 31.

² Vide Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Vol. I, pp. 98, 105, 172, 193, 225, 236; and Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," Vol. I, p. 210.

teacher, named Saṅghabhadra, who lived about 489 A.D.¹ So we may approximately fix the date of Vasubandhu at about 480 A.D. His biography² was translated from Sanskrit into Chinese during 557-569 A.D. Vasubandhu was the author of a large number of very valuable works³ including the *Tarkaśāstra*, which consists of three chapters and is perhaps the first regular Buddhist work on Logic. This work was translated into Chinese in 550 A.D. The Chinese version still exists, while the Sanskrit original has been long lost. The work appears to have been translated into Tibetan too, but my persistent efforts to discover the Tibetan version were unsuccessful.

35. Dr. Sugiura⁴ from Chinese sources has ascertained that in the 7th century A.D., while Hwen-thsang was in India, he saw three other books on Logic attributed to Vasubandhu, which are called in Chinese *Ronki*, *Ronshiki* and *Ronshin*, respectively. In the *Ronki*, quoted by Kwei-ke, Vasubandhu maintained that a thesis can be proved by two propositions only, and that, therefore, the necessary parts in a syllogistic inference are only three⁵ (i.e. *pakṣa* or minor term, *sādhya* or major term

¹ Saṅghabhadra translated *Vibhāṣā-vinaya* into Chinese in 489 A.D. *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix II, No. 95.

Mr. Takakusu, in a very learned article on Paramārtha's Life of Vasubandhu and the date of Vasubandhu published in the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, says that Saṅghabhadra, contemporary of Vasubandhu, was the translator of the *Samantapāsādikā* of Buddhaghosa into Chinese in 488 A.D.

² *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 6. The statement that there was an older translation of the life of Vasubandhu by Kumārajīva A.D. 401-409 but that it was lost in 730 A.D., cannot be accepted without further testimony. Takakusu says that "some Catalogues mention by mistake that such a work was then in existence": *vide* Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, p. 39.

³ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Appendix I, No. 6.

⁴ *Vide* Dr. Sugiura's "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," p. 32.

⁵ The Jaina logician Siddhasena Divākara probably refers to Vasubandhu, when he says that according to some logicians *antarvyāpti* (internal inseparable connection) consisting of *pakṣa* or minor term, *sādhya* or major term and *hetu* or middle term is quite enough in establishing a thesis, and that *dṛṣṭānta* or example is altogether useless. Siddhasena Divākara writes:—

अन्तर्यामिन् साधक विवेचिषदाहृतिः ।

अथा आनन्दसङ्गावेत्येवं न्यायविदो विदुः ॥ १० ॥

(*Nyāyāvatāra* of Siddhasena Divākara, edited by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana and published by the Indian Research Society of Calcutta).

and *hetu* or middle term). But it is to be regretted that these three logical works are lost, and we cannot know how far the theory of syllogism was developed in them. The work in Chinese from which alone we can know anything of his Logic is his polemic against heresies (*Nyojits-ron*).¹ In this book he gives the following form of reasoning :—

1. Sound is non-eternal,
2. Because it is a product of a cause,
3. Things produced by a cause are non-eternal like a pot,
which is produced by a cause and is non-eternal ;
4. Sound is an instance of this (kind),
5. Therefore sound is non-eternal.

¹ Is this the same work as the *Tarka-sāstra* already referred to ?



CHAPTER II.

SYSTEMATIC BUDDHIST WRITERS ON LOGIC (500—1200 A.D.).

LOGIC DISTINGUISHED FROM PHILOSOPHY.

36. In the previous chapter we have seen that from the origin of Buddhism in the 6th century B.C. to its expansion into four philosophical schools in the 4th century A.D., there were no systematic Buddhist works on Logic, but only a few stray references to that science in the works on philosophy and religion. During 400—500 A.D., Maitreya, Asanga and Vasubandhu handled Logic, but their treatment of it was merely incidental, being mixed up with the problems of the *Yogācāra* and *Vaiśbhāṣika* schools of philosophy. Vasubandhu's three works¹ on Pure Logic mentioned by Hwen-thsang are now lost and consequently their merits cannot be judged. With 500 A.D. began a period when Logic was completely differentiated from general philosophy, and a large number of Buddhist writers gave their undivided attention to that branch of learning. Dignāga is the earliest known writer of this period.

37. ĀCĀRYA DIGNĀGA—FATHER OF MEDIÆVAL LOGIC.

[Flourished in Andhra, modern Telingāna in the Madras Presidency, about 500 A.D.]

The likeness of Dignāga reproduced in the next page is taken from the Tibetan Tanyur (*Mdo, Ce*, folio 1) which was put in its present form by the celebrated Lama Bu-ṣton, who passed the last days of his life at the monastery of Sha-lu, twelve miles south-east of Tashi lhun-po. Bu-ṣton, who lived early in the fourteenth century A.D.,² must have copied the likeness from some earlier specimen, which was taken to Tibet during her intercourse with India between 600 A.D. and 1200 A.D.

A peculiarity of this likeness is its cap. In the early Buddhist Church monks were not allowed to wear any head-dress (*vide* the *Pātimokkha* rules of the *Vinaya Pīṭaka*). With the introduction of *Mahāyāna* in the first century A.D. by Kaniṣka, a great change was effected in the dress of monks, and caps of various shapes were invented. The hat worn here is called *Panchen-shwa-dmar*³ or "Paṇḍita's red cap," with a pointed

¹ *Vide* Book II, Chapter I, under the head "Vasubandhu."

² *Vide* Sarat Chandra Das's *Tibetan Dictionary*, p. 870.

³ *Vide* Waddell's *Lamaism*, pp. 194—196.

peak and long lappets. The lappets of the cap were lengthened in proportion to the rank of the wearer.

It is not known when the "Pandita's cap" was first introduced. It is said to have been taken to Tibet in 749 A.D. by Sānta Rakṣita. "Pandita" was a degree which was conferred by the Vikramaśilā University on its successful candidates. It is not known what title the Uni-



བཟུན་འགྲུར་མདོ་ཅི་གཅིག།
སློབ་དབོན་ཕྱོགས་སྒྲུང་ལ་ན་མོ།།

versity of Nālandā conferred on its distinguished students. Perhaps in that university, too, the title "Pandita" was recognised, and "Pandita's cap" was possibly a distinctive badge of the scholars of that famous university where Dignāga distinguished himself in philosophical controversies.

The woollen *shawl* worn here is indicative of the fact that after Bud-

dharma had spread into cold climes, monks like Brahmanic sages were allowed to put on suitable warm clothes. There is also in the palms of the image a thunderbolt called in Sanskrit *Vajra* and in Tibetan *Dorje*, which is a remover of all evils. The halo round the head of the image indicates that Dignāga was a saint.

LIFE OF DIGNĀGA (ABOUT 500 A.D.).

38. Dignāga or rather Ācārya Dignāga is called in Tibetan Phyogs-glan. He was born in a Brāhmaṇa family in Siṃhavaktra near Kāñcī, modern Conjeeveram in the Madras Presidency. By Nāgadatta, a Paṇḍita of the Vātsīputriya sect, he was admitted to the religious system of that sect and attained erudition in the *Tripitaka* of the *Hīnayāna*. Afterwards he became a disciple of Ācārya Vasubandhu with whom he studied all the Piṭakas of the *Mahāyāna* and *Hīnayāna*. He miraculously saw the face of Mañjuśrī, the Buddhist god of learning, from whom he received inspiration in the Law (Dharma). A few years later he was invited to Nālandā (*Vide* appendix A) where he defeated Brāhmaṇa Sudurjaya and other Tīrtha dialecticians and won them to the doctrine of Buddha. Since he had refuted chiefly the Tīrtha controversialists he was called the "Bull in discussion" (Sanskrit: Tarkapuṅgava, and Tibetan: Rtsod-pahi-khyu-mchog). He travelled through Orissa and Mahārāṣṭra to the south, meeting the Tīrtha controversialists in discussions. At Mahārāṣṭra he is said to have resided frequently in the Ācāra's Monastery.² At Orissa he converted Bhadra Pālita, Treasury-minister of the king of the country, to Buddhism. He was a man of vast learning and wisdom, and practised during his life-time twelve tested virtues. He is said to have died in a solitary wood in Orissa.

39. Dignāga must have lived before 557—569 A.D.³ when two of his works were translated into Chinese. The early limit

¹ This account of Dignāga is taken from Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 130—135. Lama Tārānātha also relates that Dignāga frequently resided in Orissa in a cavern of a mountain called Bhoraśilā where he used to give himself up to contemplation. He was specially versed in incantation formulas. It is stated that the stem of a myrobalan tree called Muṣṭiharitaki in the garden of Bhadra Pālita in Orissa entirely withered, but it revived in seven days after Dignāga had uttered incantation for its restoration. For a fuller account of Dignāga *vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Dignāga and his *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*" in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, Vol I, No. 9, 1905.

² *Vide* Watters' *On Yuan Chwang*, Vol. II, p. 122.

³ *Vide* Bynyiū Nanjio's *Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka*, App. 1, No. 10, where Dignāga is called Jina. The Chinese name of Dignāga has been wrongly rendered as Jina by Japanese writers as well as Rev. Beal.

of his date in 480 A.D. when his teacher Vasubandhu lived. Dignāga flourished possibly about 500 A.D. when the Buddhist kings of the Pallava¹ dynasty ruled the eastern coast of Southern India.

40. We have already seen that Dignāga travelled in Nālandā, Orissa, Mahārāṣṭra and Dakṣiṇa (Madras) entering everywhere into disputes with controversialists. He attacked his opponents as frequently as he was attacked by them. His whole life was passed in giving blows and receiving counter-blows. On account of this love of discussion he was, during his life-time, called the “ Bull in discussion ” (*Tarka-puṅgava*).² Even his death did not terminate the great intellectual war in which he had been engaged: though he could no longer offer any violence, his opponents continued to fall upon him with force. Mark the volleys on his dead body coming from no mean warriors! Kālidāsa,³ the prince of poets, warns his poem to avoid the “ rugged hand ” (*sthūla-hasta*) of Dignāga. Udyotakara,⁴ the eminent logician, calls Dignāga “ a quibbler ” (*Kutārkkika*). Vācaspati Miśra⁵ describes him as “ an erring one ” (*bhrānta*) and speaks of his “ blunders ” (*bhrānti*). Mallinātha⁶ compares him with a “ rock ” (*adrikalpa*). Kumārila Bhaṭṭa and Pārtha-sārathi Miśra⁷ turn their arrows against him. The

¹ On the downfall of the Andhras in 436 A.D., the Pallavas rose to power. They were in their turn driven out of their northern possessions, the kingdom of Veṅgi, by Kubja Viṣṇuvardhana of the Eastern Chalukya dynasty. During 552—580 A.D., Kāñcī, the capital of the Pallava kings, was captured by Vikramāditya I. of the Western Chalukya dynasty. *Vide* Sewell's Lists of Antiquities, Madras, Vol. II, pp. 141, 146, 148, 149 and 211, 212.

² *Vide* Lama Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, p. 134.

³ *Vide* Meghadūta, Pūrva-megha, verse 14.

+ चद्रूपपादः प्रवरो मुनीनां

एमाय शार्ङ्गं जयतो जगद् ।

कुतार्किकाज्ञाननिवृत्तिहेतुः

करिष्यते तस्य मया निबन्धः ॥

Udyotakara's Nyāya-vārtika, Introductory stanza, p. 1, in the Bibliotheca Indica series. Compare also Nyāya-vārtika, 1-1-4, pp. 43—44; 1-1-5, p. 52; 1-1-6, pp. 60—61; 1-1-7, p. 63, etc.

⁵ *Vide* Vācaspati Miśra's Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-tīkā, edited by Gangadhara Sastri, 1-1-1, pp. 1, 31; 1-1-4, pp. 76—77, 97—98, 102; 1-1-5, p. 102; 1-1-6, p. 135, etc.

⁶ Mallinātha's commentary on verse 14 of the Meghadūta, Pūrva-megha.

⁷ *Vide* Pārtha-sārathi's gloss on 59—60. Anumānapariccheda of Kumārila Bhaṭṭa's vārtika on the 5th Sūtra of Jaimini.

Vedāntins and Jainas¹ were not inactive in their hostility. Even Dharmakīrti² the Buddhist sage attempted to oppose him. Dignāga must have been a very strongly built man, both physically and mentally, otherwise he could hardly have lived for a single day under assaults from so many sides. Those of his works which still exist enable us somehow to measure his strength and his weakness.

DIGNĀGA'S *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*.³

41. The *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* is one of the grandest literary monuments of Dignāga. It is said to have been composed while he was residing on a solitary hill near Veṅgi in Andhra⁴ (modern Telingāna) in the Madras Presidency. Seeing

¹ *Vide* the works of Prabhācandra and Vidyānanda referred to in the J.B.B.R.A.S., Vol. XVIII, p. 229. The Digambara Jaina logician Dharmabhūṣaṇa, in controverting the Vaiśeṣika doctrine of *Sāmānya*, generality, quotes in support of his own conclusion the following verse of Dignāga:—

न याति न च तत्रासौ न पश्चादस्ति नाश्वत् ।

अस्ति पूर्वं नाधारमसौ व्यसनसन्ततिः ॥

इति दिग्नागकूपितकृषणमयप्रसरप्रसङ्गात्

(Quoted in Dharmabhūṣaṇa's *Nyāya-dīpikā*, Chap. III).

The same verse has been quoted in a little altered form by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya as follows:—

न याति न च तत्रासौदस्ति पश्चाद्वर्तमानम् ।

अस्ति पूर्वं नाधारमसौ व्यसनसन्ततिः ॥

(*Sarvadarāṇa saṃgraha*, chapter on *Bauddhadarāṇa*).

² *Vide* the head “Dharmakīrti” which follows.

³ The account of the composition of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* given here is taken from Lama Tārānātha's (*Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 132, 133; and the Tibetan *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., pp. 62, 75, 100 and LXVII).

⁴ *Vide* Hwen-thsang's *Travel in Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World*, Vol. II, pp. 218, 219 and 220 where the Chinese term for Dignāga is wrongly rendered as Jina. Hwen-thsang gives the following account of the composition of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*:—“When Dignāga began to compose a useful compendium [presumably the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*] for overcoming the difficulties of the *Hetuvidyā-sāstra*, the mountains and valleys shook and reverberated; the vapour and clouds changed their appearance, and the spirit of the mountain appeared before him, asking him to spread abroad the *sāstra* (*Hetuvidyā*). Then the Bodhisattva (Dignāga) caused a bright light to shine and illumine the dark places. Surprised at this wonder, the king of the country (Andhra) came near him and asked whether he was entering into *nirvāṇa*. When the king spoke of the infinite bliss of *nirvāṇa* Dignāga resolved to enter into it. Mañ-

that the Sāstras on Dialectics written earlier by him remained scattered about, he resolved to collect them. Accordingly, putting together fragments from particular works, he engaged himself in compiling in verse a compendium called the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*. While he was writing the opening lines the earth

Dignāga and Īśvara-
krṣṇa.

trembled and all the places were filled with light and a great tumult was audible. A Brāhmaṇa named Īśvara-krṣṇa¹ surprised at this wonder came to Ācārya Dignāga, and finding that he had gone out to collect alms, wiped out the words he had written. Dignāga came and rewrote the words and Īśvara-krṣṇa wiped them out again. Dignāga wrote them a third time and added: "Let no one wipe this out even in joke or sport, for none should wipe out what is of great importance; if the sense of the expression is not right, and one wishes to dispute on that account, let him appear before me in person." When after Dignāga had gone out to collect alms, the Brāhmaṇa again came to wipe out the writings he saw what was added and paused. The Ācārya returning from his rounds for meal met the Brāhmaṇa: they began controversy, either staking his own doctrine. When he had vanquished the Tīrtha (Brāhmaṇa) several times and challenged him to accept the Buddhist doctrine, the Tīrtha scattered ashes pronouncing incantations on them, and burnt all the goods of the Ācārya that happened to lie before him; and when the Ācārya was kept back by fire the Tīrtha ran away. Thereupon Dignāga reflected that since he could not work the salvation of this single individual, he would not be able to work that of others. So thinking he was on the point of giving up his purpose of compiling the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* when the Bodhisattva Ārya Mañjuśrī miraculously appeared before him in person and said:—

"Son, refrain, refrain: the intellect is infected by arguing with mean persons. Please know that when you have demonstrated it this Sāstra cannot be injured by the host of Tīrthas. I undertake to be your spiritual tutor till you have attained the

juśrī, the god of learning, knowing his purpose was moved with pity. He came to Dignāga and said: "Alas! how have you given up your great purpose, and only fixed your mind on your own personal profit, with narrow aims, giving up the purpose of saving all." Saying this he directed him to explain the *Yogācāryabhūmi-sāstra* and *Hetuvidyā-sāstra*. Dignāga receiving these directions, respectfully assented and saluted the saint. Then he gave himself to profound study and explained the *Hetuvidyā-sāstra* and the Yoga discipline.

¹ Īśvarakṛṣṇa here referred to was very probably the author of the *Sāṅkhya kārīkā*.

stage of perfection. In later times this śāstra will become the sole eye of all the śāstras." ¹

So saying Mañjuśrī disappeared and Dignāga resumed his work and completed the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*.

42. The *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* ² is a Sanskrit work written in *anuṣṭubh* metre. The Sanskrit original of it is lost but a Tibetan translation still exists. The translation was prepared by an Indian sage named Hema Varma (in Tibetan : Gser-gyi-go-cha) and a Tibetan interpreter named Daḍ-paḥi-ses-rab in the monastery of Ses-paḥi-dge-gnas. It occupies folios 1—13 of the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, volume Ce. ³ In Tibetan it is called *Tshad-maḥi-mdo-kun-las-btus-pa* (= *Pramāṇa-sūtra-samuccaya*) or briefly *Tshad-ma-kun-las-btus-pa* (= *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*) signifying a compilation of aphorisms on *Pramāṇa*, valid knowledge. It begins thus :—" Bowing down before Sugata—the teacher and protector—who is *Pramāṇa* incarnate, and benefactor of the world, I, for the sake of expounding *Pramāṇa* (valid knowledge), put together here various scattered matters, compiled from my own works." ⁴ In the closing lines

ལྷ་མ་བྱེད་མ་བྱེད་སྒྲེ་བོ་དམན་དང་འཕྲད་ལས་སྒོ་གྲེས་ངན་སྒྲེ་ཕྱེ།
 ཁྱོད་ཀྱི་བཟུན་ནས་འཛེས་འདི་ལ་སྒྲུ་སྒྲེགས་ཚྭགས་ཀྱིས་གཞིན་མི་
 རྒྱས་པར་ཤེས།

ཁྱོད་ཀྱིས་ས་ས་ཐོབ་ཀྱི་བར་དུ་དག་བའི་བཤེས་སྒྲུང་འགྲུར་གྱི།
 ཕྱི་མའི་དུས་སྒྲུ་བཟུན་བཅོས་ཀྱན་གྱི་མིག་གཅིག་དུ་ནི་འདི་འགྲུར་རོ།

Pag-saṃ-jon-zang, edited by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., p. 101.

² Probably the same as "The Śāstra on the grouped inferences," vide Takakusu's *I-tsing*, p. 167.

³ The volume Ce of the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, was put at my disposal by the India Office, London, through Mr. Thomas.

ཚད་མར་གྱུར་པ་འགྲོ་ལ་ཕན་པར་བཞིན།
 སྒྲེན་པ་བདེ་གཤེགས་སྒྲོབ་ལ་ཐུག་འཚམ་ནས།
 ཚད་མ་སྒྲུབ་ཕྱིར་རང་གི་གཞུང་ཀྱན་ལས།
 བདུས་དེ་སྒྲུ་ཚྭགས་འཐོར་ནམས་འདིར་གཅིག་བྱ།

(Tangyur. *Mdo*, Ce, folio 1).

it is stated that "Dignāga, the subduer of controversialists in all regions and the possessor of elephantine strength, compiled this from his own works."¹

43. It is divided into six chapters which are named respectively: (1) Perception (Sanskrit: *Pratyakṣa*, Tibetan: *Mnon-sum*); (2) Inference for one's own self (Sanskrit: *Svārthānumāna*, Tibetan: *Ran-don-gyi-rje-dpag*); (3) Inference for the sake of others (Sanskrit: *Parārthānumāna*, Tibetan: *ḡshan-gyi-don-gyi-rje-dpag*); (4) Three characteristics of the Middle Term (Sanskrit: *Tri-rūpa-hetu*, Tibetan: *Tshul-sun-gtan-tshigs*) and Rejection of Comparison (Sanskrit: *Upamāna-khandana*, Tibetan: *Dpe-dan-dpe-ltar-snan-pa*); (5) Rejection of Credible Word or Verbal Testimony (Sanskrit: *Sabdānumānanirāsa*, Tibetan: *Sgra-rje-dpag-min*); and (6) Parts of a syllogism (Sanskrit: *Nyāyāvayava*, Tibetan: *Rigs-pali-yan-lag*).

44. Dignāga does not give any formal definition of Perception, which is well known as the knowledge of objects derived through the channels of the senses. But he describes Perception as that which is freed from illusory experiences and is unconnected with name, genus, etc.² Suppose a man in the twilight mistakes a rope for a snake: his experience of the snake is merely illusory

¹ རྩོམས་རྣམས་ཀུན་གྱི་ཕ་ས་ཀྱི་རྒྱལ་བ་རྣམས་།
འཛོམས་པར་བྱེད་ལ་གླང་པོ་འི་སྒྲེབས་ལྡན་བ་།
རྩོམས་ཀྱི་གླང་པོ་འི་གཞུང་ཀུན་ལས་བདུས་བ་།

(Tangyur. Mdo, Ce, folio 13).

² In chapter I of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, Dignāga describes Perception as follows:—

མངོན་སུམ་རྟོག་པ་དང་བྲལ་བ་།
མིང་དང་རིགས་སོགས་མི་བསྐྱེས་པའོ་།

The Sanskrit equivalents for those two lines are as follows:—

प्रत्यक्षं कल्पनापौरुषं
नामजात्याद्यसंयुतम् ॥

(*Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, chapter I).

The first of these lines has actually been quoted, and Dignāga's whole theory of Perception severely criticised, by the Hindu logician Udyotakara in his *Nyāya-vārtika*, 1-1-4.

and is not, according to Dignāga, an act of Perception. Dignāga contends that Perception is also not connected with name, genus, etc. Suppose I see a cow. This cow, which I see, is a peculiar one. Its infinite peculiarities can only be realised by me who have seen it. If I proceed to indicate this cow to other persons by saying that I saw a cow which is named Ditha or which is red, etc., I can only convey to those persons the idea of a cow of a certain class, that is, a cow possessing the common characteristics of a class of cows, but can never express to them the individual cow which I saw. Hence it follows that (a result of) Perception cannot be properly expressed by name, genus, etc. But very different is the case with inference. Knowledge derived through inference is general, and can be well expressed by name genus, etc., whereas that derived through Perception is particular, and is incapable of being properly communicated to others by name, genus, etc.

45. In the chapter on Perception Dignāga has criticised the Hindu logician Vātsyāyana, who concluded that the mind

Dignāga criticises Vātsyāyana.

(*manas*) was a sense-organ, because it was accepted as such in several systems of philosophy, and the view was not opposed in the Nyāya-sūtra according to the maxim "if I do not oppose a theory of my opponent¹ it is to be understood I approve of it." Dignāga criticises this maxim of Vātsyāyana saying: "if silence proved assent it was useless for the Nyāya-sūtra to mention other sense-organs."²

¹ Vātsyāyana writes :—

मनस इन्द्रियभावाच्च वाच्यं लक्षणाकारमिति । तन्नाकारसमाचाराच्चैतत्
प्रत्येत्यमिति परमतमप्रतिषिद्धमनुमतमिति हि तन्त्वयुक्तिः ।

(Nyāyabhāṣya, 1-1-4).

² Dignāga writes :—

वगमासंवेदयितुं शक्यं ।
द्वन्द्वं चोपपत्तिं शक्यं ।

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter I).

The Sanskrit originals of the lines are as follows :—

अनिर्दिष्टादुपात्तं चेत्
अन्येन्द्रियवत् इत्या ॥

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter I).

These two lines have been quoted and criticised by the Hindu logician Vācaspati Miśra in his Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-ṭīkā, 1-1-4.

46. In chapter II of the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, Dignāga mentions the views of some logicians who from smoke, which is the middle term, infer *fire* which is inseparably connected with it, and also of others, who from smoke infer the connection between it and the hill which is the minor term. He argues against the first mentioned logicians saying that if they infer *fire* from smoke they gain no new knowledge from this inference, for it is already known that smoke is inseparably connected with fire. His argument against the other logicians is that they are not able to infer the *connection*, for connection implies two things, whereas here only one thing, *viz.*, the hill, is visible, but the other, *viz.*, fire, is not visible. What then do we really infer from smoke? Dignāga says it is not fire nor the connection between it and the hill, but it is the *fiery* hill that is inferred.¹

What Dignāga meant to say is:—

The *Nyāya-sūtra* distinctly mentions the eye, ear, nose, tongue and touch as sense-organs, but says nothing as to whether the mind (*manas*) is a sense-organ or not. The presumption from this silence is that the mind is not a sense-organ according to the *Nyāya-sūtra*.

But Vātsyāyana, the famous Hindu commentator on the *Nyāya-sūtra* interprets the silence in a quite different way, concluding therefrom that the mind (*manas*) is a sense-organ according to the *Nyāya-sūtra*.

Dignāga contends "if silence was a proof of assent why did the *Nyāya-sūtra* not remain silent regarding the other five sense-organs too?"

¹ Dignāga writes:—

དགས་ནི་འབྲུལ་བ་མེད་པའི་ཕྱིར།
 ཁ་ཅིག་ཆོས་གཞན་དཔེག་ཅེས་ཟེར།
 ཆོས་དང་ཆོས་ཅན་གྲུབ་པའི་ཕྱིར།
 ཁ་ཅིག་འབྲེལ་བ་འདྲིད་པ་ཡིན།
 ཆོས་ལ་དགས་ནི་གྲུབ་ཅེན།
 གཞན་དེས་ཅི་ཞིག་དཔག་པར་བྱེད།
 ཅི་ཞེ་ཆོས་ཅན་ལ་དེ་ཉིད།
 ཅི་ཕྱིར་ཇེས་སུ་དཔེག་མི་བྱེད།
 འབྲེལ་བ་ལ་ཡང་གཉིས་པོ་མེད།

47. In chapter III, Dignāga says that an Inference for the sake of others consists in making explicit a matter which was inferred by one's own self.¹ In chapter IV, he rejects Comparison as a separate source of knowledge. He says that when we recognise a thing through Perception of a similar thing, we really perform an act of Perception. Hence Comparison or Recognition of Similarity is not a separate source of knowledge, but is included in Perception. In chapter V, he rejects "Credible Word" or "Verbal Testimony" as a separate source of knowledge. He asks: "what is the significance of a Credible Word? Does it mean that the person who spoke the word is credible or the fact he averred is credible?" "If the person," continues Dignāga, "is credible, it is a mere infer-

དེ་ཐུན་ལ་ནི་རྒྱལ་པ་ཐོས།
 བརྗོད་མིན་དོན་གྱིས་གཟུང་བ་པར་འགྱུར།
 འདི་ལ་དྲགས་དང་འབྲེལ་མ་ཡིན།

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter II).

The Sanskrit originals of these lines are as follows :—

केचिद् धर्माकारं मेयं लिङ्गस्याव्यभिचारतः ।
 संवत् केचिदिच्छन्ति सिद्धत्वाद्धर्मधर्मिणो ॥
 लिङ्गं धर्मो प्रसिद्धं चेत् किमन्यत् तेन भोयते ।
 अथ धर्मिणि तस्यैव किमर्थं नानुमेयता ॥
 संवत्सेऽपि द्वयं नास्ति बह्वी श्रूयते तद्वति ।
 अवाच्योऽनुष्टुप्सोऽतवाव्यवसायो लिङ्गसंगतः ॥

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter II).

The Hindu logician Vācaspati Miśra has quoted and criticised these lines in the Nyāya-vārtika-tātparyā-ṭīkā, 1-1-5.

¹ Dignāga writes :—

གཞན་གྱི་དོན་གྱི་ཁྲིམས་དབག་ནི།
 རང་གིས་མཐོང་དོན་གསལ་བྱེད་ཡིན།
 དེ་ལ་དབག་བྱ་བསྐྱེད་པ་ནི།

(Pramāṇa-samuccaya, chapter III).

² Vide a very interesting discussion on it in the Nyāya-vārtika, 1-1-6, where the Hindu logician Udyotakara defends the Nyāya-sūtra and the Nyāya-bhāṣya from the attacks of Dignāga.

ence. On the other hand if the fact is credible, it is a case of Perception." Hence Dignāga concludes that Credible Word or Verbal Testimony is not a separate source of knowledge, but is included in Perception and Inference.¹

DIGNĀGA'S Nyāya-praveśa.

48. The Nyāya-praveśa² or rather "Nyāya-praveśo-nāma pramāṇa prakaraṇa" is another excellent work on Logic by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original is lost. There exists a Tibetan translation of it which extends over folios 183—188 of the Tangyur, section Mdo, volume Ce. The translation was prepared by the great Kāśmīrian Pandita Sarvajña-śrī Rakṣita and the Sākya monk Grags-pa-rgyal-mtshan-dpal-bzañ, in the great Sa-skya monastery of Western Tibet. The work in Tibetan is called Tsha-l-ma-rigs-par-hjug-paḥi-sgo signifying the "Door of Entrance to Logic." It opens thus:—

"Demonstration and refutation together with their fallacies are useful in arguing with others; and Perception and Inference together with their fallacies are useful for self-understanding; seeing these I compile this Śāstra."³

Parts of a Syllogism.†

49. Some of the subjects discussed in the work are noticed below:—

¹ Vide Udyotakara's rejoinder in the Nyāya-vārtika 1-1-7.

² I consulted the Nyāya-praveśa from the volume Ce of the Tibetan Tangyur which was placed at my disposal by the India Office, London. I have also brought a copy of the Nyāya-praveśa from the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim which I visited in May 1907. This is probably the same as "Nyāya-dvāra-śāstra": Vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 186. and Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, Nos. 1223 and 1224. Cf. Dr. Sugiura's "Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan," pp. 36, 60, where Śaṅkara Svāmin's Nyāya-praveśa-tarka-śāstra is noticed.

སྤྱུང་བ་དང་ནི་སྤྱན་འབྱིན་ཉིད།
ལྟར་སྤྱང་བཅས་པ་གཞན་རྟོགས་ཕྱིར།
མངོན་སྤྱུང་དང་ནི་རྗེས་སུ་དབག།
ལྟར་སྤྱང་བཅས་པ་བདག་རིག་ཕྱིར།
ཅེས་པ་བསྟན་བཅོས་བསྐྱུས་པའོ།།

(Nyāya-praveśa).

† In Tibetan: Rigs-paḥi-yan-lag (རིགས་པའི་ཡན་ལག) and in Sanskrit: Nyāyāvayava (न्यायवयव)।

Reasoning, according to the Nyāya-praveśa, is carried on by means of a minor term, a major term, a middle term and two examples. The minor term is also called the subject (in Sanskrit: *pakṣa* or *dharmin*, and in Tibetan phyogs or choṣ-can). The major term is otherwise called the predicate (in Sanskrit: *sādhya* or *dharma*, in Tibetan: *bsgrub-par-bya* or choṣ). The middle term is also called the reason or mark (in Sanskrit: *hetu*, *liṅga* or *sādhana*, in Tibetan: *gtan-tshigs* or *bsgrub-par-byed*). The example (called in Sanskrit: *dṛṣṭānta*, in Tibetan: *dpe-brjod*) is of two kinds, viz., (1) homogeneous (in Sanskrit: *sādharmya*, in Tibetan: *chos-nythun-pa*) and (2) heterogeneous (in Sanskrit: *vaidharmya*, in Tibetan: *chos-mi-mthun-pa*).

Form of a Syllogism. 50. The form of reasoning is as follows:—

- (1) This hill is fiery.
- (2) Because it has smoke,
- (3) All that has smoke is fiery like a kitchen and whatever is not fiery has no smoke like a lake.

Here 'hill' is the minor term, 'fiery' the major term, 'smoke' the middle term, 'kitchen' a homogeneous example and 'lake' a heterogeneous example.

Thesis. 51. A minor term and a major term linked together constitute a proposition, e.g.

The *hill* (minor term) is *fiery* (major term).

A proposition which is offered for proof is a Thesis.

52. There are certain types of thesis which cannot stand the test of proof and are therefore fallacious.

The Fallacies of Thesis.¹

The following theses are fallacious:—

(1) A thesis incompatible with perception, such as: "sound is inaudible."

(2) A thesis incompatible with inference, such as: "A pot is eternal."

(Really "A pot is non-eternal because it is a product.")

(3) A thesis incompatible with the public opinion, such as: "Man's head is pure, because it is the limb of an animate being." (Or money is an abominable thing. I or some men like me may say "money is an abominable thing," but the world does not say so).

¹ In Tibetan: phyogs-ltar-snañ (ཉམས་ལྡན་སྒྲུབ་) : in Sanskrit: pak-
ṣābhāsa (पक्षाभास) ।

(4) A thesis incompatible with one's own belief or doctrine, such as : A Vaiśeṣika philosopher saying "sound is eternal."

(5) A thesis incompatible with one's own statement such as : "My mother is barren."

(6) A thesis with an unfamiliar minor term, such as : The Buddhist speaking to the Sāṃkhya, "Sound is perishable." (Sound is a subject well known to the Mīmāṃsaka, but not to the Sāṃkhya).

(7) A thesis with an unfamiliar major term, such as : The Sāṃkhya speaking to the Buddhist, "The soul is animate."

(8) A thesis with both the terms unfamiliar, such as : The Vaiśeṣika speaking to the Buddhist. "The soul has feelings as pleasurable, etc."

(The Buddhist neither deals with the soul nor with its feelings).

(9) A thesis universally accepted, such as : "Fire is warm." (This thesis cannot be offered for proof as it is accepted by all.

Three Characteristics of 53. The Middle Term (Hetu) must possess three characteristics, viz. :—

(1) The whole of the minor term (pakṣa) must be connected with the middle term, e.g.

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
Like a pot but unlike ether.

In this reasoning "product" which is the middle term includes the whole of "sound" which is the minor term.

(2) All things denoted by the middle term must be homogeneous with things denoted by the major term, e.g.

All things produced are non-eternal as a pot.

(3) None of the things heterogeneous from the major term must be a thing denoted by the middle term, e.g.

No non-non-eternal (that is, no eternal) thing is a product, as ether.

54. If we suppose the minor term or subject to be 'S,' the middle term or reason to be 'R,' and the major term or predicate to be 'P,' then the above-mentioned three characteristics of the middle term may be symbolically set forth as follows :—

(1) All S is R.

(2) All R is P.

(3) No R is non-P.

¹ Called in Tibetan : *Ġtan-tshigs-ni-tshul-gsum* (གཏན་ཚིག་སེལ་གསུམ་)

གསུམ) and in Sanskrit : *Liṅgasya trairūpyam* (लिङ्गस्य त्रैरूप्यम्) ।

Now, the negative aspect of the middle term, *viz.*, no R is non-P only confirms the truth conveyed by one of the positive aspects, *viz.*, all R is P. Hence we may put aside the negative aspect, and exhibit the positive aspects as follows :—

- (1) All S is R.
- (2) All R is P.

Again, in the above instance 'R' and 'P' may be taken in their whole extent or partially. So the two positive aspects mentioned above may be fully exhibited as follows :—

- (1) (a) All S is all R.
(b) All S is some R.
- (2) (a) All R is all P.
(b) All R is some P.

Combining aspect (1) and aspect (2) together we find that a syllogism may be of any one of the following forms :—

- (1) All S is all P (conclusion) :
Because All S is all R,
All R is all P.
- (2) All S is some P (conclusion) :
Because All S is all R,
All R is some P.
- (3) All S is some P (conclusion) :
Because All S is some R,
All R is all P.
- (4) All S is some P (conclusion) :
Because All S is some R,
All R is some P.

Hence we find that Dignāga admits only two conclusions, *viz.*

All S is all P, and
All S is some P.

55. The second and third of the characteristics mentioned above indicate the relative extension of the middle term and major term. They show that the middle term is universally or inseparably connected with the major term. This universal or inseparable connection between them is called in Sanskrit *Vyāpti* and in Tibetan *Khyab* which was, as far as I find, first discovered by Dignāga.

Supposing that the middle term or reason is R, and the major term or predicate is P, the connection between the two terms may be symbolically set forth as follows :—

- (1) All R is all P, and
- (2) All R is some P.

56. Owing to the violation of one or more of the three characteristics, there occur Fallacies of the Middle Term.¹ the Middle Term which may be of fourteen kinds as follows :—

A. The *unproved* (Sanskrit : Asiddha, Tibetan : Ma-grub) which occurs :

(1) When the lack of truth of the middle term is recognised by both the parties, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is *visible*.

(Neither of the parties admits that sound is visible).

(2) When the lack of truth of the middle term is recognised by one party only, *e.g.*

Sound is evolved,
Because it is a *product*.

(The Mīmāṃsakas do not admit that sound is a product).

(3) When the truth of the middle term is questioned, *e.g.*

The hill is fiery,
Because there is *vapour*.

(Vapour may or may not be an effect of fire and may or may not be connected with it otherwise).

(4) When it is questioned whether the minor term is predic-able of the middle term, *e.g.*

Ether is a substance,
Because it has qualities.

(It is questioned whether ether has qualities).

B. The *uncertain* (Sanskrit : Anīcīta, Tibetan : Ma-ñes-pa) which occurs :

(5) When the middle term is too general, abiding equally in the major term as well as in the opposite of it, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is *knowable*.

(The 'knowable' is too general because it abides in the eternal as well as the non-eternal. This is a fallacy of being too general, called in Sanskrit : *Sādhāraṇa* and in Tibetan : *Thun-mon*).

(6) When the middle term is not general enough, abiding neither in the major term nor in its opposite, *e.g.*

¹ In Tibetan : *ġtan-tshigs-ltar-snañ* (གཏན་ཁྱོལ་མཁས་ལྟར་སྒྲུང་) and in Sanskrit : *Hetvābhāsa* (हेतुभाष) ।

Sound is eternal,
Because it is audible.

(This is a fallacy of being not general enough, called in Sanskrit : *Asādhāraṇa*, and in Tibetan : Thun-moñ-ma-yin).

(7) When the middle term abides in some of the things homogeneous with, and in all things heterogeneous from, the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is not a product of effort,
Because it is *non-eternal*.

(The non-eternal abides in some of the things which are not products of effort, such as lightning, and abides in all things which are not non-products of effort).

(8) When the middle term abides in some of the things heterogeneous from, and in all things homogeneous with, the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is a product of effort,
Because it is non-eternal.

(The non-eternal abides in some of the things which are not products of effort, as lightning, and abides in all things which are products of effort).

(9) When the middle term abides, in some of the things homogeneous with and in some heterogeneous from, the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal.

(Some incorporeal things are eternal as ether, but others are not as intelligence).

(10) When there is a non-erroneous contradiction, that is, when a thesis and its contradictory are both supported by what appear to be valid reasons, *e.g.*

The Vaiśeṣika speaking to the Mīmāṃsaka :

“ Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product.”

The Mīmāṃsaka speaking to the Vaiśeṣika :

“ Sound is eternal,
Because it is always audible.”

(Both of the reasonings are correct, but as they lead to contradictory conclusions they are classed as *uncertain*).

C. The contradictory (Sanskrit : Viruddha, Tibetan : *Hgal-wa*) which occurs :

(11) When the middle term is contradictory to the major term,
e.g.

Sound is eternal,
Because it is a product.

(Product is inconsistent with eternal).

(12) When the middle term is contradictory to the implied major term, e.g.

The eyes, etc., are serviceable to some being,
Because they are made of particles,
Like a bed, seat, etc.¹

(Here the major term "serviceable to some being" is ambiguous, for, the apparent meaning of 'some being' is 'the body,' but the implied meaning of it is 'the soul.' Though things 'made of particles' are serviceable to the body, they are not, according to the Sāṃkhya, serviceable to the soul which is attributeless. Hence there is contradiction between the middle term and the implied major term).

(13) When the middle term is inconsistent with the minor term, e.g.

Sāmānya (generality) is neither substance, quality, nor action;

Because it depends upon one substance and possesses quality and action.

(*Sāmānya* or generality does not depend upon one substance, etc.)

(14) When the middle term is inconsistent with the implied minor term, e.g.

Objects are stimuli of action;

Because they are apprehended by the senses.

("Objects" is ambiguous meaning (1) things and (2) purposes. The middle term is inconsistent with the minor term in the second meaning).

Dignāga's theory of examples. Examples converted to universal proposition.

57. An example before the time of Dignāga served as a mere familiar case which was cited to help the understanding of the listner, e.g.

The hill is fiery,
Because it has smoke,
Like a kitchen (example).

Asaṅga (q.v.) made the example more serviceable to reasoning, but Dignāga converted it into a universal proposition, that

¹ This example may lead us to presume that the author of Nyāya-praveśa knew Īśvara Kṛṣṇa's Sāṃkhya-kārikā which is the oldest of the works on Sāṃkhya philosophy that have come down to us.

is a proposition¹ expressive of the universal or inseparable connection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

The hill is fiery ;

Because it has smoke ;

All that has smoke is fiery as a kitchen (homogeneous example).

The above example is homogeneous. A heterogeneous example is thus given :—

Whatever is not fiery has no smoke as a lake.

58. Examples have already been stated to be of two kinds, *viz.*, 1. Homogeneous and 2. Heterogeneous. Each of these kinds becomes fallacious under certain circumstances. Fallacies of the homogeneous example are the following :—

(1) An example not homogeneous with the middle term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,

Because it is incorporeal,

That which is incorporeal is eternal as the atoms.

(The atoms cannot serve as an example because they are not incorporeal. This is called a fallacy of the Excluded Middle Term).

(2) An example not homogeneous with the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,

Because it is incorporeal,

That which is incorporeal is eternal as intelligence.

(Intelligence cannot serve as an example because it is not eternal. This is called a fallacy of the Excluded Major Term).

(3) An example homogeneous with neither the middle term nor the major term, *e.g.*

¹ The universal proposition, that is, the proposition expressive of the universal relation between the middle term and the major term, serves as the major premise in a syllogism of the celebrated Greek logician Aristotle. It was long unknown in India. Dignāga's discovery of the universal proposition marks a new era in the history of Indian Logic and shows a great development of the principle of induction first apprehended by Asaṅga in India.

² Called in Tibetan : Chos-ṡthun-dpe-ltar-snañ-wa (ཆོས་སྡུན་དཔེ་

ལྟར་སྒྲུབ་) and in Sanskrit : Sādharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa (साधर्म्य-दृष्टान्ताभास) ।

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
That which is incorporeal is eternal, as a pot.

(The pot cannot serve as an example because it is neither incorporeal nor eternal. This is called a fallacy of the Excluded Middle and Major Terms).

(4) A homogeneous example showing a lack of universal connection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

This person is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Whoever is a speaker is passionate, as a certain man in Magadha.

(Though a certain man in Magadha may be both speaker and passionate, there is nevertheless no universal connection between being a speaker and being passionate. This is a fallacy of Absence of Connection called in Sanskrit : *Ananvaya*, in Tibetan : *Rjes-su-hgro-wa-med*).

(5) A homogeneous example showing an inverse connection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product of effort,
Whatever is non-eternal is a product of effort, as a pot.

(The pot cannot serve as an example because though it is both non-eternal and a product of effort, the connection between the major term and the middle term has been inverted, *i.e.*, all products of effort are non-eternal; but all non-eternals are not products of effort. This is a fallacy of Inverse Connection called in Sanskrit : *Viparitānvaya*, in Tibetan : *Rjes-su-hgro-wa-phyin-ci-log-pa*).

Fallacy of the heterogeneous example.¹ 59. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example are the following :—

(6) An example not heterogeneous from the opposite of the middle term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Whatever is non-eternal is not incorporeal, as intelligence.

¹ Called in Tibetan : *Chos-mi-mthun-dpe-ltar-gnañ-wa* (ཆོས་མི་མཐུན་

དཔེ་ལྟར་སྒྲུབ་) and in Sanskrit : *Vaidharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa* (वैधर्म्य-दृष्टान्ताभास) ।

(Intelligence is non-eternal, yet incorporeal. This is a fallacy of Included Middle Term in a heterogeneous example).

(7) An example not heterogeneous from the opposite of the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Whatever is non-eternal is not incorporeal, as atoms.

(The atoms are not incorporeal yet they are eternal. This is a fallacy of Included Major Term in a heterogeneous example).

(8) An example heterogeneous from neither the opposite of the middle term nor the opposite of the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Whatever is non-eternal is not incorporeal, as a pot.

(A pot is neither eternal nor incorporeal. This is called a fallacy of Included Middle and Major Terms in a heterogeneous example).

(9) A heterogeneous example showing an absence of disconnection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

This person is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Whoever is non-passionate is not a speaker, as a piece of stone.

(This is called a fallacy of Absence of Disconnection of a heterogeneous example).

(10) A heterogeneous example showing an absence of inverse disconnection between the middle term and the major term, *e.g.*

Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
Whatever is non-product is not non-eternal, as ether.

The example should be inverted as :

Whatever is non-non-eternal, *i.e.*, eternal, is not a product, as ether. This is called a fallacy of Inverted Negation of a heterogeneous example.

60. All the three kinds of fallacies—of the Thesis, Middle Term and Example—are fallacies of reasoning. Refutation (called in Sanskrit : *Dūṣaṇa* and in Tibetan : *Sun-hbyin*) consists in finding out in the reasoning of the opponent any one of the fallacies aforementioned. Fallacy of Refutation (called in

Sanskrit : Dūṣaṇābhāsa and in Tibetan : Sun-hbyin-ltar-gnan-wa) consists in alleging a fallacy where there is no fallacy at all.

61. Perception and Inference are the two kinds of valid knowledge for one's own self. Perception (called in Sanskrit : Pratyakṣa, and in Tibetan : Muon-sum) is knowledge derived through the senses. It is free from illusory experiences and is not connected with name, genus, etc. Inference called in Sanskrit : Anumāna and in Tibetan : Rjes-su-lpag is the knowledge of objects derived through a mark (Tibetan : Rtags) or middle term which has three characteristics. There are Fallacies of Perception as well as of Inference (called respectively Pratyakṣābhāsa and Anumānābhāsa in Sanskrit, and Muon-sum-ltar-nan and Rjes-lpag-ltar-gnan in Tibetan).

DIGNĀGA'S Hetu-cakra-hamaru.

62. The Hetu-cakra-hamaru¹ is another small treatise on Logic by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original is lost, but a Tibetan translation is preserved in the Tangyur, section Mdo, folios 193-194. The Tibetan translation was prepared by the sage Bodhisattva of Za-hor and the Bhikṣu Dharmāsoka. The work in Tibetan is called (gtan-tshigs-kyi-hkhor-lo-gtan-la-dwab-pa, signifying "the Wheel of Reasons put in order." It begins thus :—

"Bowing down to the Omniscient One (Buddha), who has destroyed the net of errors, I explain the system of three characteristics of the Reason (or Middle Term)."²

In this work Dignāga has analysed all nine possible relations between the middle and the major terms and has found that there

¹ I brought a copy of the Tibetan version of the Hetu-cakra-hamaru from the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim which I visited in June 1907. This work is probably the same as the Hetu-dvāra-sāstra : vide Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 187.

² འབྲུག་པའི་བླ་པ་འཛོམས་སེའོ་བའི།

ཐམས་ཅད་མཁྱེན་ལ་ཕྱག་འཚལ་ནས།

གཏན་ཚིགས་རྩིས་གསུམ་ཁོ་བོ་ཡི།

གཏན་ལ་དབབ་པ་བཤད་པར་བྱ།

(Hetu-chakra-hamaru).

are among them two relations which conform to the three characteristics of the middle term already laid down, and the remaining seven relations are at variance with those characteristics. Accordingly he has concluded that only two relations are valid as will be evident from the annexed diagram.

OTHER WORKS OF DIGNĀGA.

Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti.

65. The **Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti** is a commentary on the **Pramāṇa-samuccaya** by Dignāga himself. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ which extends over folios 13—96 of the Tangyur, section **Mdo**, volume **Ce**. The Tibetan translation was prepared, at the command of king **Rigs-ldan-rgyal-po**, by the famous Indian sage **Vasudhara Rakṣita**, who was as it were the crest-gem of logicians, and the Tibetan interpreter **Sha-ma-dge-bśñen-siu-rgyal**. In Tibetan it is called **Tshad-ma-kun-laṣ-btuṣ-paḥi-hgrel-wa**. It is divided into six chapters corresponding to those of the **Pramāṇa-samuccaya** itself. At the end of the work it is stated that “led on by the command of **Mañjunātha** (the god of learning), **Dignāga** the great dialectician of sharp intellect wrote this śāstra which is as deep as the ocean.”

66. There is another translation of the **Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti** in Tibetan extending over folios 96—180 of the Tangyur, section **Mdo**, volume **Ce**. It was prepared by the Indian sage **Hema Varma** (called in Tibetan **Gser-gyi-go-cha**) and the Tibetan interpreter **Dad-pa-ṣeṣ-rab** in the monastery of **S'i-waḥi-dge-gnaṣ**.

Pramāṇa-śāstra-praveśa.

67. **Pramāṇa-śāstra-praveśa**² is another work by Dignāga. It was translated into Chinese by the Chinese interpreter **Tha-sam-tsan**. The Chinese version was translated into Tibetan by the Chinese scholar **Dge-ṣeṣ-sin-gyan** and the Tibetan monk **Šton-gshon** in the **Saṣkya** monastery of Western Tibet. The Sanskrit original of the work appears to be lost, but the Tibetan version still exists. It consists of folios 188—193 of the Tangyur, section **Mdo**, volume **Ce**. In Tibetan the work is called **Tshad-maḥi-bstan-bcos-rig-pa-la-hjug-pa** signifying “An Entrance to the Science of Logic.”

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work in the possession of the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work in the possession of the India Office, London.

63. THE WHEEL OF REASONS.

(Nine possible relations between the Middle Term and the Major Term in a syllogism.)

1	2	3
Sound is eternal. Because it is knowable. Like ether and like a pot. Here the 'knowable' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in all things homogeneous with, and all things heterogeneous from, the 'eternal' (which is the major term). The reason or middle term is too general. Truth is uncertain.	Sound is non-eternal. Because it is produced. Like a pot and like ether. Here the 'produced' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in all things homogeneous with, but does not abide in any thing heterogeneous from, the 'non-eternal' (which is the major term). The reasoning is valid. Well!	Sound is a product of effort. Because it is non-eternal. Like a pot, like lightning and like ether. Here the 'non-eternal' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in all things homogeneous with, and some things heterogeneous from, the product of effort (which is the major term). Truth is uncertain.
4	5	6
Sound is eternal. Because it is produced. Like ether and like a pot. Here the 'produced' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in nothing homogeneous with, but in all things heterogeneous from, the 'eternal' (which is the major term). The reason or middle term is contradictory to the major term.	Sound is non-eternal. Because it is audible. Like a pot and like ether. Here the 'audible' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in nothing homogeneous with, and in nothing heterogeneous from, the 'non-eternal' (which is the major term). The reason or middle term is not general enough. Truth is uncertain.	Sound is eternal. Because it is a product of effort. Like ether, like a pot and like lightning. Here the 'product of effort' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in nothing homogeneous with, but in some things heterogeneous from, the 'eternal' (which is the major term). The reason or middle term is contradictory to the major term.
7	8	9
Sound is a non-product of effort. Because it is non-eternal. Like lightning, like ether, and like a pot. Here the 'non-eternal' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in some things homogeneous with, and in all things heterogeneous from, the 'non-product of effort' (which is the major term). Truth is uncertain.	Sound is non-eternal. Because it is a product of effort. Like a pot, like lightning and like ether. Here the 'product of effort' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in some things homogeneous with, but in nothing heterogeneous from, the 'non-eternal' (which is the major term). The reasoning is valid. Well!	Sound is eternal. Because it is corporeal. Like atoms, like some of dust, like action and like a pot. Here the 'corporeal' (which is the reason or middle term) abides in some things homogeneous with, and some things heterogeneous from, the 'eternal' (which is the major term). Truth is uncertain.

64. ANALYSIS OF THE WHEEL.

1	2	3
Sound is eternal (S is P). Because it is knowable (S is R). (a) The knowables are all eternal, as ether (R is all P), that is, all eternal are knowable as ether. (b) The knowables are all non-eternal, as a pot (R is all non-P), that is, all non-eternal are knowable as a pot. Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is all P—right R is all non-P—wrong } reasoning is unsound.	Sound is non-eternal (S is P). Because it is produced (S is R). (a) The produced are all non-eternal as a pot (R is all-P), that is, all non-eternal are produced, as a pot. (b) No non-eternal are non-produced, as ether, that is, non-produced are non-eternal as ether (R is non-P). Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is all P—right R is no non-P—right } reasoning is sound.	Sound is a product of effort (S is P). Because it is non-eternal (S is R). (a) The non-eternal are all products of effort, that is, all products of effort are non-eternal, as a pot (R is all-P). (b) Some non-product of effort is non-eternal, as lightning; that is, the non-eternal is some non-product of effort as lightning (R is some non-P). (c) Some non-product of effort is not non-eternal, as ether, that is, the non-eternal is not some non-product of effort as ether (R is not some non-P). Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is all P—right R is some non-P R is not some non-P } wrong } reasoning is unsound.
4	5	6
Sound is eternal (S is P). Because it is produced (S is R). (a) The produced are not eternal, as ether (R is no P), that is, the eternal are not produced, as ether. (b) The non-eternal are all produced (R is all non-P), that is, the produced are non-eternal, as a pot. Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is no P—wrong R is all non-P—wrong } reasoning is unsound.	Sound is non-eternal (S is P). Because it is audible (S is R). (a) The audibles are non-eternal as a pot (R is no P), that is, the non-eternal are no audibles, as a pot. (b) No non-eternal (that is, no eternal), is audible, as ether, that is, no audible is non-eternal, as ether (R is no non-P). Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is no P—wrong R is no non-P—right } reasoning is unsound.	Sound is eternal (S is P). Because it is a product of effort (S is R). (a) The products of effort are non-eternal, (R is no P), that is, the eternal are no products of effort, as ether. (b) The products of effort are some non-eternal, as a pot (R is some non-P), that is, some non-eternal are products of effort, as a pot. (c) The products of effort are not some non-eternal, as lightning (R is not some non-P), that is, some non-eternal are not products of effort, as lightning. Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is no P—wrong R is some non-P R is not some non-P } wrong } reasoning is unsound.
7	8	9
Sound is a non-product of effort (S is P). Because it is non-eternal (S is R). (a) The non-eternal are some non-products of effort, as lightning (R is some P), that is, some non-products of effort are non-eternal as lightning. (b) The non-eternal are not some non-products of effort, as ether (R is not some P), that is, some non-products of effort are not non-eternal, as ether. (c) The non-eternal are all non-non-products of effort as a pot (R is all non-P). Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is some P—right R is not some P R is all non-P—wrong } reasoning is unsound.	Sound is non-eternal (S is P). Because it is a product of effort (S is R). (a) The products of effort are some non-eternal, that is, some non-eternal are products of effort as a pot (R is some P). (b) The products of effort are not some non-eternal, as lightning (R is not some P), that is, some non-eternal are not products of effort as lightning. (c) The non-eternal are not products of effort, as ether, that is, the products of effort are no non-eternal, as ether (R is no non-non-eternal, as ether (R is no non-P). Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—right R is some P—right R is not some P R is no non-P—right } reasoning is sound.	Sound is eternal (S is P). Because it is corporeal (S is R). (a) The corporeals are some eternal, as atoms (R is some P), that is, some eternal are corporeal, as atoms. (b) The corporeals are not some eternal, as ether (R is not some P), that is, some eternal are not corporeal, as ether. (c) The corporeals are some non-eternal, as a pot (R is some non-P). (d) The corporeals are not some non-eternal, as action (R is not some non-P). Symbolically: S is P Because S is R—wrong R is some P—right R is not some P R is some non-P R is not some non-P } wrong } reasoning is unsound.

Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā.

68. The **Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā**¹ is another work by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation which consists of one folio only (folio 180) of the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, volume *Ce*. The work in Tibetan is called *Dmigs-pa-brtag-pa* signifying "An Examination of the Objects of Thought." It begins with an invocation to Buddha and all Bodhisattvas.

Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-vṛtti.

69. The **Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-vṛtti**² is a commentary on the **Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā** by Dignāga himself. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan version which is embodied in the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, volume *Ce*, folios 180—182. The work in Tibetan is called *Dmigs-pa-brtag-paḥi-hgrel*.

Trikāla-parīkṣā.

70. The **Trikāla-parīkṣā**³ is a work by Dignāga. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan version in the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, volume *Ce*, folios 182—183. This version was prepared by the great Paṇḍita Śāntakara Gupta and the interpreter-monk Tshul-hkhrims-r̥gyal-mtshan. The work in Tibetan is called *Dus-gsum-brtag-pa* signifying "An Examination of Three Times."

ŚAṆKARA SVĀMIN (ABOUT 550 A.D.).

71. Śaṅkara Svāmin,⁴ as it appears from Chinese records, was a pupil of Dignāga. He seems to have been a native of Southern India. Logic is said to have been handed down by Dignāga through Śaṅkara Svāmin and ten other masters to Śīlabhadra, who was the head of the Nālandā University, and the favourite teacher of the Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang in

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work as contained in the India Office, London. This is probably the same as "Ālambaṇa-pratyaya-dhyāna-śāstra": vide Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, No. 1173, and Takakusu's I-ting, p. 188.

² I have consulted the xylograph of this work as contained in the India Office, London.

³ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work as contained in the India Office, London. This work is probably the same that is called by Takakusu "The Śāstra on the Meditation of the Three Worlds": vide Takakusu's I-ting, p. 187. The "worlds" is evidently a mistake for "times."

⁴ Vide Dr. Sugiura's Hindu Logic as preserved in China and Japan, pp. 36, 37.

635 A.D. According to the Chinese Tripiṭaka Śaṅkara Svāmin was the author of a work called *Nyāya-praveśa Tarka-sāstra*,¹ which was translated into Chinese by Hwen-thsang in 647 A.D. This work seems to be different² from the “*Nyāya-praveśa*” or more fully the “*Nyāya-praveśo nāma pramāṇa-prakarṇa*” which, as we have seen, is ascribed by the Tibetans to Dignāga.

DHARMAPĀLA (ABOUT 600—635 A.D.).

72. Dharmapāla,³ a logician, was a native of Kāñcīpura in Drāviḍa (modern Conjeeveram in Madras). He was the eldest son of a great minister of the country. From his childhood he exhibited much cleverness, and as he was a young man the king and queen of the country condescended to entertain him at a feast. In the evening of that day his heart was oppressed with sorrow, and assuming the robes of a Buddhist recluse he left home, and applied himself with unflagging earnestness to learning. He was admitted into the University at Nālandā (*vide* Appendix A) in which he acquired great distinction. Subsequently he became the head of the University. He must have retired from Nālandā before 635 A.D., when Hwen-thsang visited it, and found that Śīlabhadra had succeeded him in the headship of the University. Dharmapāla conjointly with Bhartṛhari composed a *Beḍā vṛtti* on Pāṇini's grammar.

73. He was a follower of the Yogācāra philosophy and was the author of several works such as (1) *Ālambāna-pratyaya-dhyāna-sāstra-vyākhyā*; (2) *Vidvāmātra-siddhi-sāstra-vyākhyā*; and (3) *Sata-sāstra-vaipulya-vyākhyā* which was translated into Chinese in 650 A.D. Hwen-thsang, who visited India in 629 A.D., found in Kauśāmbī the ruins of a monastery where Dharmapāla had refuted the arguments of the heretics.

ĀCĀRYA ŚĪLABHADRA (635 A.D.).

74. Śīlabhadra⁴ belonged to the family of the king of Samatāṭa (Bengal), and was of the Brāhmaṇa caste. He was a pupil

¹ *Vide* Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, no. 1216, and Appendix I, No. 13.

² The Tibetans do not know Śaṅkara Svāmin at all. The Chinese pilgrim I-tsing, who visited India during 671—695, speaks of Dignāga and Dharmakīrti, but does not mention Śaṅkara Svāmin. Even Hwen-thsang in his *Travel* does not mention him.

³ *Vide* Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. 1, p. 237; vol. 11, pp. 110—223, 229 and 230. *Vide* also Takakusu's I-tsing, p. lvii, and Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka, Appendix I, No. 16.

⁴ *Vide* Beal's Buddhist Records of the Western World, vol. 11, p. 110; and Takakusu's I-tsing, p. 181.

of Dharmapāla at the Nālandā University (*vide* Appendix A) of which subsequently he became the head. The Chinese pilgrim Hwen-thsang was his pupil ¹ in 635 A.D. Śīlabhadra was a great logician and master of śāstras.

ĀCĀRYA DHARMAKĪRTI (ABOUT 635—650 A.D.).

75. The excellent Dharmakīrti,² called in Tibetan Chog-grags, according to the accounts of all earlier sages, was born in the south in the kingdom of Cūdāmaṇi.³ Since, however, there is now no country by that name, and since on the other hand all the orthodox and heterodox alike name Trimalaya as the birth-place of Dharmakīrti, it is to be accepted that in olden times Trimalaya was called the kingdom of Cūdāmaṇi. His father was a Tirtha of the Brāhmaṇa caste, Parivrājaka Koru-nanda by name. Endowed from childhood up with a very keen intellect he attained to great skill in the fine arts, in the Vedas and Vedāṅgas, in the art of healing, in grammar, and in all the theories of the Tirthas. When only sixteen or eighteen years old, he was already deeply versed in the philosophy of the Tirthas. Occasionally he attended lectures of the Buddhists, and realised that the teachings of Buddha were without faults. There grew up in him a strong inclination towards Buddhism. He donned the dress of a Buddhist Upāsaka (devotee). When the Brāhmaṇas inquired the reason of this he praised the excellence of Buddhism for which he was out-casted. Thereupon he came to Madhyadeśa ⁴ (Magadha), was received into the Saṅgha (priesthood) by Īcārya Dharmapāla, attained to great learning in the three Piṭakas, and knew in all 500 sūtras and dhāraṇīs by heart.

76. Dharmakīrti desiring to become acquainted with the

¹ *Vide* Takakusu's I-tsing, p. xlv.

² This account is taken from Lama Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 175—185.

³ Cūdāmaṇi is probably the same as Coda or Chola country in the Eastern Deccan. As a fact Dharmakīrti was born in the Deccan: *Vide* article 82 under *Pramāṇa-vārtika kārīkā*.

⁴ In Tibetan literature *Madhya-deśa* signifies Magadha (Behar). But Manu defines *Madhya deśa* as the country lying between the Himalayas on the north, the Vindhya mountains on the south, *Prayāga* in the east, and the river *Sarasvatī* on the west:

द्विसप्तद्विंशत्यसंख्यं यत् प्रान् विनक्षमादि ।

अथगेव प्रथमाद्य सप्तद्वेजः प्रकीर्तितः ॥

(*Manusamhitā* 2 : 21).

In this connection *vide* a very learned article named "Note on the Middle Country of Ancient India" by Rhys Davids in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, January 1904.

secret doctrine of the Tirtha system, donned a slave-attire and went southward. On inquiring who was versed in the Tirtha system, he was informed that the Brāhmaṇa Kumārila was an incomparable master of the same. The assertion that Kumārila was an uncle of Dharmakīrti is unsupported by Indian authority. Kumārila had received a large fortune from his king, owned many rice-fields, five hundred male slaves and five hundred female slaves and many hundred men. When Dharmakīrti after entering their service performed the work of fifty slaves indoors and outdoors, Kumārila and his wife were satisfied. They allowed him to hear the secret doctrines. Obtaining knowledge of the secret teaching from Kumārila, he left his house. With the wages which he received from Kumārila for his special services he gave a great feast to the Brāhmaṇas in the night of his departure.

77. Thereupon he challenged the followers of the system of Kaṇāda named Kaṇāda Gupta and other followers of the Tirtha system and entered upon debates with them. The debates lasted for three months, during which he withstood all his opponents and converted many of them to Buddhism. Upon this Kumārila was enraged and appeared with 500 Brāhmaṇas for debate. He proposed the condition that whoever was defeated should be killed. Dharmakīrti who did not desire the death of Kumārila induced the latter to enter upon the condition that whoever was defeated should accept the doctrine of the winner. Putting *Dharma* (doctrine) up as the prize they began the debate, and finally Dharmakīrti was victorious. Kumārila and his 500 followers became followers of Buddha.

78. Dharmakīrti further withstood the Nirgranthas (Jainas), Rāhuvratins and others, who lived within the range of the Vindhya mountains. Returning to Dravali (Drāviḍa?) he challenged by criers those who were ready for debate. The majority of the Tirthas fled; and some actually confessed that they were not equal to the fight. He re-established all the religious schools that had fallen into decay in that country, and lived in the loneliness of the forest given up to meditation.

79. Dharmakīrti towards the end of his life erected a viḥāra in the land of Kalinga, and after having converted many people to the Law (*Dharma*) passed away. Those of his pupils, who by their lives had become like Brahma, carried him to the cemetery for cremation. Then there fell a heavy rain of flowers, and for seven days the whole country was filled with fragrance and music.

80. This Ācārya (Dharmakīrti) and the Tibetan king Sroṅ-tsan-gam po are said to have been contemporaries, which statement might be accepted as authoritative.

81. From this account it is evident that Dharmakīrti was a pupil of Dharmapāla. As the latter lived in 635 A.D., Dharmakīrti must also have lived about that time. This date agrees well with the statement that Dharmakīrti was a contemporary of the Tibetan king Sron-tsan-gam-po who lived during 627—698 A.D.¹ It seems that in 635 A.D., Dharmakīrti was very young as Hwen-thsang does not mention him. On the other hand I-tsing, who travelled over India during 671—695 A.D., declares eloquently how “Dharmakīrti made further improvement in Logic”² after Dignāga. The Brāhmanic logician Udyotakara³ is attacked by Dharmakīrti. The Mimāṃsaka Sureśvarācārya,⁴ author of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka-vārtika, and the Digambara Jaina Vidyānanda, author of the Aṣṭa-sāhasrikā,⁵ have on the contrary criticised the definition of perception (*Pratyakṣa*) as given by Dharmakīrti, who is some times designated by the shorter name Kīrti. Vācaspati Miśra⁶ too quotes Dharmakīrti to criticise him.

Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā.

82. Dharmakīrti is the author of numerous works on Logic. The *Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* is one of them. A verse⁷ of this work was quoted by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in

¹ Vide Wassilief, p. 54; and Csoma de Koros's Tibetan Grammar, p. 183.

² Takakusu's I-tsing, p. lviii.

³ Vide K. B. Pathak's "Bhartṛhari and Kumārila," *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1892, vol. xviii, p. 229.

⁴ Cf. चिन्त्वे त्वविनाभावादिति यदर्थक्यकीर्तिना ।

प्रत्यक्षायि प्रतिज्ञेयं होयेतासौ न संशयः ॥

(Sureśvara's Bṛhadāraṇyaka-vārtika, chap. vi.)

⁵ Vide *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, vol. xix, 1895—97, p. 56.

⁶ Cf. यथाह धर्मकीर्तिः—

तस्मान्नार्थं न च ज्ञाने श्रुत्याभाससदात्मनः ।

एकत्र प्रतिषिद्धत्वादपि न संशयः ॥

(Vācaspati's Bhāmati on Vedānta-sūtra 2-2-28).

⁷ The verse runs thus :—

भेदश्च भान्तिविज्ञानैः दृश्येतेन्द्रविबाहये ॥

(Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā quoted in Mādhavācārya's Sarvadarśanasamgraha, chapter on Bauddha darśana).

the 14th century A.D. The following story¹ is told regarding the composition of this work :—

It is said that Dharmakīrti studied many dialectic sāstras, but his spirit was not satisfied. Once at the house of one Īśvara Sena,² a pupil of Dignāga, he heard the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*. Having heard it for the first time he at once became as proficient as Īśvara Sena who had minutely studied the work. When he heard it the second time, he became like Dignāga, the author of the work, and when he heard it the third time, he recognised several errors in the work. When he mentioned them to Īśvara Sena, the latter so far from being displeased, told him that he was at liberty to condemn all the mistakes of the work and to prepare a critical commentary on it. With the permission thus received he composed a metrical commentary on the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya* called the *Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā*.

83. The Sanskrit original of the *Pramāṇa-vārtika* appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ of it in the Tangyur, section *Mdo*, volume *Ce*, folios 194—208. This translation was prepared by the Indian sage Subhūti-śrī-śānti and the Tibetan interpreter *Dge-waḥi-blo-gros*. The work in Tibetan is called *Tshaḥ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-tshig* signifying “Memorial Verses explanatory of *Pramāṇa* or Sources of Knowledge.” The work is divided into four chapters as follows :—(1) Inference for one’s own self (in Tibetan : *Rau-gi-don-rjes-su-ḍpag-pa*, in Sanskrit : *Svārthānumāna*); (2) Establishment of *Pramāṇa* (in Tibetan : *Tshaḥ-ma-grub-pa*, in Sanskrit : *Pramāṇa-siddhi*); (3) Perception (in Tibetan : *Muon-sum*, in Sanskrit : *Pratyakṣa*); and (4) Words for the sake of others (in Tibetan : *Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-tshig*, in Sanskrit : *Parārtha-vākya*). The work concludes by stating that “it was written by the great sage Śrī Dharmakīrti

The Tibetan version of the verse runs as follows :—

རྣམ་ཤེས་འདུལ་བམ་རྒྱ་བ་གཉིས་॥
མེད་པར་ཐ་དང་མཐོང་བ་བཞིན་॥

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* embodied in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *Ce*, folio 239. *Vide* Louis de la Vallée Poussin’s *Le Bouddhisme d’après les sources brahmaniques*, p. 34).

¹ *Vide* Tārānātha’s *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 176.

² It seems that Īśvara Sena, in whose house Dharmakīrti heard the *Pramāṇa-samuccaya*, was not a direct pupil of Dignāga, for, while Dignāga lived about 500 A.D., Dharmakīrti lived about 625 A.D.

³ I have consulted the copy of this work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office. London.

who was unrivalled and whose fame filled the entire earth.”¹ It is further stated that he was born in the Deccan (in Tibetan : Yul-lho-phyog).

Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti.

84. There was a sub-commentary on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā* called *Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti* by Dharmakīrti himself. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost. There exists, however, a Tibetan translation² of it in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Cc, folios 420—535. In Tibetan the work is named *Tshad-ma-rnam-ḡgrel-gyi-ḡgrel-wa*. In the concluding lines of the work Dharmakīrti is described as “a great teacher and dialectician, whose fame filled all quarters of the earth and who was, as it were, a lion, pressing down the head of elephant-like debaters.”³

Pramāṇa-viniścaya.

85. *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* quoted⁴ by Mādhavācārya is another work on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original

१ ལྷན་པའི་གྲགས་པས་སའི་སྤྱང་མ་ལུས་པ་བྱུང་བ། འགྲན་ཆེ་མེད་
པའི་མཁས་པ་ཆེན་པོ་དཔལ་ཆོས་ཀྱི་གྲགས་པས་མཛད་པ་ཐོགས་སོ།།

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika kārikā*).

² I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work embodied in the *Tangyur* of the India Office, London.

३ རིགས་པ་ཆེན་པོ་སའི་སྤྱང་མ་ལུས་པ་ན་སྤྱོད་པའི་སྤྱང་པ་ཆེན་པོ་
བོ་གཞོན་པར་མཛད་པའི་སངས་ལ། སྤྱོད་པ་ལུས་པར་ལྷན་པར་གྲགས་
པ་ཆན་དཔལ་སྤྱོད་པ་ཐོག་ཆོས་གྲགས་སྤྱར་བ།

(*Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti*).

⁴ The following verses of *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* were quoted in the *Sarvadarśana-saṅgraha*, chapter on *Bauddha darśana*, by the Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in the 14th century A.D. :—

नान्योलुभाया बुद्ध्याश्चि तस्य नानुभवोपरः ।

याज्ञपादकवैधुर्यात् स्वयं तैव प्रकाशते ॥ (क)

सद्योपलब्धनियमाद् अभेदो नोलतद्विधोः ॥ (ख)

अविभागोऽपि बुद्ध्याऽद्या विपर्ययितदशनेः ।

याज्ञपादकसंविन्निभेदवानिव लब्धये ॥ (ग)

(*Pramāṇa-viniścaya*, chap. I).

of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ of it in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios 259—347. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Parahita Bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter Blo-lḍan-śes-rab in the matchless city of Kāśmīra. The work in Tibetan is called Tshaḍ-ma-nan-par-nes-pa signifying “Determination of Pramāṇa or Sources of Knowledge.” The work is divided into three chapters as follows:—(1) System of Perception (in Tibetan: Mnong-sum-gtan-la-ḍwab-pa, in Sanskrit: Pratyakṣa-vyavasthā); (2) Inference for one’s own self (in Tibetan: Rang-gi-don-gyi-rjes-su-ḍpag-pa, in Sanskrit: Svārthānumāna); and (3) Inference for the sake of others (in Tibetan: Gshan-gyi-don-gyi-rjes-su-ḍpag-pa, in Sanskrit: Parārthānumāna). In the concluding lines Dharmakīrti is described as a great sage of unrivalled fame born in Southern India.

Prof. Louis de la Vallee Poussin in his “Le Bouddhisme d’après les sources brahmaniques,” pp. 32 and 34, identifies the above verses with their Tibetan versions as follows:—

སྒོ་ཡིས་ཉམས་སྤྱོད་བྱ་བ་ཞུགས་ཅིང་།
 དེ་ཡི་སྤྱོད་བྱ་བ་ཞུགས་ཡོད་མིན་།
 གཟུང་དང་འཛིན་བ་མེད་པའི་ཕྱིར་།
 དེ་ནི་དེ་ལྟར་རང་ཉིད་བསམ་ལ། (༧)
 ལྟན་ཅིག་དམིགས་པ་ངེས་པའི་ཕྱིར་།
 སྒོ་དང་དེ་སྒོ་གཞན་མ་ཡིན་། (༨)
 སྒོ་བདག་རྣམ་པར་དབྱེར་མེད་ཀྱང་།
 མཐོང་བ་ཕྱིན་ཅི་ཡོག་རྣམས་ཀྱིས་།
 གཟུང་བ་འཛིན་བ་རིག་བ་རྣམས་།
 བསམས་ཅད་དང་བཅས་བཞིན་རྟོགས་འགྲུར་། (༩)

(Pramāṇa-viniścaya, chap. I, embodied in the Tibetan Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios 272, 274 and 273 respectively).

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of this work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

Nyāya-bindu.

86. **Nyāya-bindu** is another excellent work on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work was discovered among the palm leaf manuscripts preserved in the Jaina temple of Sāntinātha, Cambay, and has been published in the Bibliotheca Indica series of Calcutta by Professor Peterson. There exists a Tibetan translation¹ of the work in the Tangyur, *Mdo, Ce*, folios 347—355. The work in Tibetan is called *Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa* signifying "A Drop of Logic." It is divided into three chapters as follows: (1) Perception (in Tibetan: *Mnon-sum*, in Sanskrit: *Pratyakṣa*); (2) Inference for one's own self (in Tibetan: *Bdag-gi-don-gyi-rjes-su-dpag-pa*, in Sanskrit: *Svārthānumāna*); and (3) Inference for the sake of others (in Tibetan: *Gshan-gyi-don-rjes-su-dpag-pa*, in Sanskrit: *Parārthānumāna*). Some of the subjects discussed in the work are noted below:—

87. In chapter I, it is stated that all objects of man are accomplished by perfect or valid knowledge. Valid knowledge is of two kinds: (1) Perception (in Sanskrit: *Pratyakṣa*) and (2) Inference (in Sanskrit: *Anumāna*). Perception which is knowledge derived through the senses, etc., is described as that which is free from illusory experiences (*kalpanā*) and devoid of confusion (*abhrānta*). Illusory experiences are the experiences of false images which appear real as if they were capable of being addressed and touched, e.g., the shadow of a tree may appear as the tree itself or a rope may appear as a snake. Confusion is engendered by such causes as darkness, quick motion, journey by boat, shaking, etc., for instance, to a man journeying by boat, trees on both banks appear to move. Perception is of four kinds: (1) perception by the five senses; (2) perception by the mind; (3) self-consciousness; and (4) knowledge of a contemplative saint. An object of perception is like itself (*sva-lakṣaṇa*) while an object of inference is like any one of its class (*sāmānya-lakṣaṇa*), for instance, a cow which I see is a peculiar one possessing an infinite number of qualities which distinguish it from all cows, whereas a cow which I infer is a general one possessing certain qualities in common with other cows; that is, perception is individual knowledge while inference is general knowledge. According to the proximity or remoteness of an object, perception of it varies. This is the peculiar characteristic of an object of perception, and this characteristic proves the object to be absolutely real (*paramārtha-sat*), as it

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan xylograph of the *Nyāya-bindu* embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London, as also the excellent edition of F. J. Sher-batski.

shows that it possesses some practical efficiency, and this characteristic also shows that perception is a source of valid knowledge for it exactly corresponds to the object perceived.

88. In chapter II, Inference for one's own self (Svārthānumāna) is defined as the knowledge of the inferrible derived through the reason or middle term with its three forms or characteristics. In the instance 'this hill has fire, because it has smoke,' the knowledge of the hill as having fire is derived through smoke which is the reason or middle term. The three forms or characteristics of the reason or middle term are the following :—

(1) The middle term must be connected with the minor term, *e.g.*

The hill has fire,
Because it has smoke,
Like a kitchen but unlike a lake.

In this reasoning there must be 'smoke' on the 'hill.'

(2) The middle term must abide only in cases which are homogeneous with the major term, *e.g.*, in the above reasoning 'smoke' abides in a kitchen which is homogeneous with things that contain fire.

(3) The middle term must never abide in cases which are heterogeneous from the major term, *e.g.*, in the above reasoning 'smoke' does not abide in a lake which is heterogeneous from things that contain fire.

89. The middle term is of three kinds according to the relation which it bears to the major term, thus:—

(1) Identity (in Tibetan: Ran-bshin, in Sanskrit: Svabhāva), *e.g.*

This is a tree,
Because it is śimśapā.

(2) Effect (in Tibetan: Hbraṣ-bu, in Sanskrit: Kārya), *e.g.*
Here there is fire, because there is smoke.

(3) Non-perception (in Tibetan: Mi-dmigs-pa, in Sanskrit: Anupalabdhi), which is of 11 kinds as follows:—

i. Non-perception of identity (Svabhāvānupalabdhi), *e.g.*
Here is no smoke, because it is not perceived (though smoke is of a nature as to be perceived if existent).

ii. Non-perception of effect (Kāryānupalabdhi), *e.g.*
Here there are no causes of smoke of unobstructed capacity, because there is no smoke here.

iii. Non-perception of the pervader or container (Vyāpakānupalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there is no Śimśapā, because there is no tree at all.

iv. Perception contrary to identity (Svabhāva-viruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

There is no cold sensation here because there is fire.

v. Perception of the opposite effect (Viruddha-kāryopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there is no cold sensation because there is smoke.

vi. Perception of contrary connection (Viruddha-vyāptopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Even the destruction of the past entity is not certain, because it is dependent on other causes.

vii. Perception contrary to the effect (Kārya-viruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there are no causes of cold of unobstructed capacity, because there is fire.

viii. Perception contrary to the container (vyāpakaviruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Here there is no icy sensation, because there is fire.

ix. Non-perception of the cause (Kāraṇānupalabdhi), *e.g.*

There is no smoke, because there is no fire.

x. Perception contrary to the cause (Kāraṇa-viruddhopalabdhi), *e.g.*

Hair on his body does not stand erect, because he sits near a fire.

xi. Perception of effect contrary to its cause (Kāraṇa-viruddha-kāryopalabdhi), *e.g.*

This place does not contain any person on whose body hair stands erect, because there is smoke here.

90. In chapter III Inference for the sake of others (Parārthānumāna) is defined as the

Inference for the sake of others.

declaration of the three-formed middle term in words, that is, when the reason

is set forth in words with a view to producing a conviction in others, it is said to be an inference for the sake of others.

Inference is a kind of knowledge; and words are here called inference by the attributing of effect to cause, for, though they

are not themselves knowledge, they produce it. Inference for the sake of others is of two kinds: (1) direct or homogeneous (in Sanskrit: Sādharmyavat); and (2) indirect or heterogeneous (in Sanskrit: Vaidharmyavat), as follows:—

(a) Sound is non-eternal,

Because it is a product,

All products are non-eternal as a pot (direct).

(b) Sound is non-eternal,

Because it is a product,

No non-non-eternal *i.e.*, eternal (thing) is a product as ether (indirect).

91. The minor term (Pakṣa) is that to which the relation of the major term is to be proved, as—This hill has fire, because it has smoke. In this reasoning 'hill' is the minor term which is to be proved as having 'fire' which is the major term. A minor term and its corresponding major term combined together, constitute a proposition which, when offered for proof, is called a thesis.

Fallacies of thesis or
Pakṣābhāsa.

92. There are four fallacies of the
thesis (Pakṣābhāsa).

A thesis is fallacious if it is incompatible with—

(1) Perception, *e.g.* Sound is inaudible;

(2) Inference, *e.g.* Sound is eternal;

(3) Conception, *e.g.* The moon is not *luna* (Sāśi a-candra);
or (4) One's own statement, *e.g.* Inference is not a source of knowledge.

93. It has already been stated that the middle term must possess three characteristics. Fallacies of the middle term (Hetvābhāsa) occur even if one of the characteristics is unproved, uncertain or contradictory, thus—

A. Unproved (asiddha).

(1) Sound is eternal, because it is visible.

(Visibility of sound is admitted by neither party).

(2) Trees are conscious, because they die if their barks are taken off.

(This peculiar kind of death of trees is not admitted by the opponent).

(3) The hill has fire, because it has vapour.

(Vapour as an effect of fire is questioned).

(4) The soul is all-pervading, because it is perceived everywhere.

(It is a matter of doubt whether the soul is perceived everywhere).

B. Uncertain (anaikāntika).

(5) Sound is non-eternal.

Because it is knowable.

(The knowable is too general, because it includes the eternal as well as the non-eternal).

(6) A certain man is omniscient,

Because he is a speaker.

(The reason is not general enough, for speakers are not necessarily either omniscient or non-omniscient).

C. Contradictory (viruddha).

(7) Sound is eternal,

Because it is a product.

(Here 'product' is not homogeneous with 'eternal,' that is, the middle term is opposed to the major term).

(8) Sound is eternal,

Because it is a product.

(Here 'product' is not heterogeneous from 'non-eternal').

94. The opposition of the middle term to the major term is a kind of contradiction which is admitted by both Dignāga and Dharmakīrti. Opposition of the middle term to the implied major term (in the event of the major term being ambiguous) is noted by Dignāga in his *Nyāya-praveśa*¹ as another kind of contradiction (*Viruddha*). Dharmakīrti in his *Nyāyabindu* rejects this view saying that this second contradiction is included in the first kind.² Dignāga has in his *Nyāya-praveśa* treated another kind of fallacy called "non-

¹ *Vide Nyāya-praveśa*, Fallacies of the Middle Term, No. 12. This contradiction, viz., the opposition of the middle term to the implied major term (*रहविघातकद्वि विरुद्ध*) is called in Tibetan: རྩོམ་ཅན་གྱི་ཁྱད་

པར་རྟེན་ཅི་ལོག་ཏུ་བསྐྱབ་པར་བྱེད་པ། (*Nyāya-praveśa*).

² तत्र च ह्यतोऽपि रहविघातकद्वि विरुद्धः । ... स रस कस्माद्योक्तः अन्यथोरेव चानर्थावात् । (*Nyāya-bindu*, Peterson's edition, *Bibliotheca Indica series*, chapter III, p. 113).

अथं च विरुद्ध आचार्य्य दिङ्नागेन उक्तः । स कस्मादु वार्त्तिककारेण सता नया नाक्तः । (*Nyāyabindu-tīkā*, Peterson's edition, *Bibliotheca Indica series*, chapter III, p. 78).

erroneous contradiction" ¹ (Viruddhāvyabhicāri), which it rejected by Dharmakīrti in his Nyāyabindu, on the ground that it does not arise in the case of inference, but is based on the scriptures of the two parties engaged in disputation.

95. In opposition to Dignāga, Dharmakīrti maintains that
 Dharmakīrti's Theory of example. 'example' is not a part of a syllogism,
 as it is included in the middle term,
e.g.

The hill is fiery,
 Because it is smoky,
 Like a kitchen.

In this reasoning the term 'smoky' includes a 'kitchen' as well as other similar things, hence it is almost unnecessary to cite the example 'kitchen.'

Compare K. B. Pathak's "On the authorship of the Nyāyabindu" in the *Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, vol. XIX, p. 51.

¹ *Vide* Nyāya-praveśa, Fallacies of the Middle Term, No. 10. This fallacy of 'non-erroneous contradiction' is called in Sanskrit: विवदा-
 अभिचारो and in Tibetan: འགལ་བ་ལ་མི་འབྲུག་པ་ (Nyāya-praveśa).

विवदाव्यभिचार्यपि संशयहेतुवृत्तः। स इह कस्माच्चोक्तः अनुमानविषये
 अवयवात्। (Nyāyabindu, p. 115).

ननु आचार्येण विवदाव्यभिचार्यपि संशयहेतुवृत्तः। क्व तर्हि आचार्य-
 दिङ्मात्रेण अर्थ हेतुदोष उक्तः इत्याह। ... तस्मादागमाश्रयमनुमानमाश्रित्य विवदा-
 व्यभिचार्यवृत्तः। (Nyāyabindu-ṭīkā, p. 84).

Compare also B.B.R.A.S., vol. XIX, p. 49.

² विवदो हेतुवृत्तः। तावन्तैव अर्थप्रतीतिरिति न प्रथग् दृष्टान्तो नाम साधना-
 वयवः कश्चित्। तेनास्य लक्षणं प्रथग्[न] उच्यते मतार्थत्वात्।

(Nyāyabindu, Peterson's edition, Bibliotheca Indica series, pp. 115—
 116). Peterson has omitted न wrongly as will appear from the Tibetan
 version which runs as follows:—

གདན་ཚིགས་ཀྱི་མཚན་ཉིད་གསུམ་སྟེ་ས་པ་དེ་ཙམ་གྱིས་དོན་རྟོགས་པས།
 དཔེ་ཞེས་བྱ་བ་སྐྱབ་པ་ནི་ཡན་ལག་ནི་ལོགས་ཤིག་ཏུ་ཅི་ཡང་མེད་དོ།
 དེས་ན་དེའི་མཚན་ཉིད་ལོགས་ཤིག་ཏུ་མ་བརྗེད་དེ་དོན་གོ་བའི་ཕྱིར། ॥ १३१ ॥

(Nyāyabindu, Sherbatski's edition, St. Petersburg, p. 193).

Nevertheless, says Dharmakīrti,¹ the example has this much value that it points out in a particular way what has been expressed in a general form by the middle term : thus, the general expression “all smoky things are fiery” is made more impressive by the particular example ‘kitchen’ which is smoky as well as fiery.

96. Example is of two kinds : (1) homogeneous and (2) heterogeneous. Fallacies of the homogeneous example. Fallacies of the heterogeneous example occur as follows :—

- (1) Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Like action.

(Action cannot serve as an example, because it is not eternal, that is, because it is excluded from the major term).

- (2) Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Like atoms.

(Atoms cannot serve as an example, because they are not incorporeal, that is, because they are excluded from the middle term).

- (3) Sound is eternal,
Because it is incorporeal,
Like a pot.

(Pot cannot serve as an example, because it is neither eternal nor incorporeal, that is, because it is excluded from both major and middle terms).

- (4) This man is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Like a person in the street.

(The person in the street cannot serve as an example, as it is questionable whether he is passionate, that is, it involves doubt as to the validity of the major term).

- (5) This man is mortal,
Because he is passionate,
Like a person in the street.

(This example involves doubt as to the validity of the middle term, that is, it is questionable whether the person in the street is passionate).

.....उक्तम् अभेदेन.....

पुनर्विद्येवैष दशमोऽयमुक्तो । (Nyāyabindu, p. 116).

- (6) This man is non-omniscient,
Because he is passionate,
Like a person in the street.

(This example involves doubt as to the validity of both the major and middle terms, that is, it is questionable whether the person in the street is passionate and non-omniscient).

- (7) This man is passionate,
Because he is a speaker,
Like a certain person.

(This example is unconnected (*ananvaya*), for there is no inseparable connection between being 'passionate' and being a 'speaker').

- (8) Sound is non-eternal,
Because it is a product,
Like a pot.

(This example involves the fallacy of 'connection unshown,' *apradarśitānvaya*: the connection should be shown as follows: All products are non-eternal like a pot).

- (9) Sound is a product,
Because it is non-eternal,
All non-eternal things are products like a pot.

(The example involves the fallacy of inverted connection, *viparītānvaya*; the real connection should be shown as follows: All products are non-eternal like a pot).

97. Similarly there are nine fallacies of the heterogeneous example.

98. *Refutation (Dūṣaṇa)* consists in pointing out in the reasoning of an opponent any one of the fallacies mentioned above. The fallacies or semblances of refutation are the futilities called in Sanskrit *Jāti*.¹

99. In the concluding lines of the *Nyāyabindu* it is stated that "Dharmakīrti vanquished the entire Tīrthikas as Sākyamuni had subdued the large army of Māra; and as the sun dispels darkness, the *Nyāyabindu* has exterminated the Ātmaka theory (that is, the Tīrthika doctrine)—wonderful!"²

¹ For *Jāti* vide *Nyāya-sūtra*, Book I, aphorism 58.

² འགྲུབ་པ་མ་འདྲི་མེད་པའི་ཆེད་ཀྱི་སྒྲིག་པ་ལྟར་།
ཆེད་ཀྱི་གྲགས་པ་མ་འདྲི་མེད་པའི་ཆེད་ཀྱི་སྒྲིག་པ་ལྟར་།

Hetu-bindu-vivarāṇa.

100. The Hetu-bindu-vivarāṇa is another excellent work on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios 355—375. The work in Tibetan is called *Ġtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa* signifying “A Drop of Reason.” The work is divided into three chapters as follows :—

(1) Relation of identity between the middle term and the major term (in Tibetan : *Ran-bshin-gyi-gtan-tshigs*, in Sanskrit : *Sva-bhāva-hetu*); (2) Relation of effect and cause between the middle term and the major term (in Tibetan : *Hbras-buḥi-gtan-tshigs*, in Sanskrit : *Kārya-hetu*); and (3) Relation of negation between the middle term and the heterogeneous major term (in Tibetan : *Mi-dmigs-paḥi-gtan-tshigs*, in Sanskrit : *Anupalabdhi-hetu*).

Tarka-nyāya or Vāda-nyāya.

101. The Tarka-nyāya or Vāda-nyāya is another treatise on Logic by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios 384—416. The work in Tibetan is called *Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-pa* signifying the “Method of Discussion.” The Tibetan translation was prepared by the great Indian sage *Jñāna-sri-bhadra* and the Tibetan interpreter-monk *Dge-waḥi-blo-gros*. Subsequently the translation was retouched by the great Paṇḍita *Dīpaṅkara* (of *Vikramaṇipura* in Bengal, born in 980 A.D.) and the interpreter-monk *Dar-ma-grags*.

Santānāntara-siddhi.

102. The Santānāntara-siddhi is a philosophical treatise by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of the work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan version³ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ce, folios

ཉི་མས་སྒྲུབ་ཅུང་རིགས་པའི་ཐོགས་པ་ཡིས།།

བདག་གི་ལྟ་བ་དུངས་ལུང་ངོ་མཚར་ཉིད།།

(Nyāyabindu).

¹ I have consulted the copy embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

³ I have consulted the Tibetan version embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

416—420. The work in Tibetan is called Rgyud-gshan-grub-pa signifying “Proof of the Continuity of Succession.”

Sambandha-parikṣā.

103. The Sambandha-parikṣā is another philosophical treatise by Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of the work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folios 375—377. The work in Tibetan is called Hbrel-wa-brtag-pa signifying “Examination of Connection.” The Tibetan translation was prepared by the Indian teacher Jñāna-garbha and the interpreter Vande-nam-mkhas.

Sambandha-parikṣā-vṛtti.

104. The Sambandha-parikṣā-vṛtti² is a commentary on the Sambandha-parikṣā by Dharmakīrti himself. The Sanskrit original of the work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ce, folios 377—384. The work in Tibetan is called Hbrel-wa-brtag-pahi-hgrel-wa.

DEVENDRABODHI (ABOUT 650 A.D.).

105. Devendrabodhi, called in Tibetan Lha-dwañ-blo, was a contemporary of Dharmakīrti,³ and so lived about 650 A.D. He wrote the following work on Logic :—

106. The Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā, called in Tibetan, Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-dkah-hgrel, signifying “An Explanation of Difficulties in the Pramāṇa-vārtika of Dharmakīrti.” The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Che, folios 1—380. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Subhūti-śrī and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Dge-waḥi-blo-groṣ.

107. This story⁵ is told regarding the composition of the Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā :—

Dharmakīrti chose Devendrabodhi to write a commentary on his Pramāṇa-vārtika. After Devendrabodhi had finished the

¹ I have consulted the copy embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the copy of this work embodied in the Tangyur of the India Office, London.

³ *Vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 186—187.

⁴ I have consulted the work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim in 1907.

⁵ *Vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 186—187.

commentary for the time and shown it to Dharmakīrti, the latter erased it with water. After he had compiled it a second time, Dharmakīrti burnt it in fire. He then compiled it a third time and gave it to Dharmakīrti with the observation : " Since the majority of men are incompetent and time is fleeting, I have written this commentary for the people of lighter understanding." This time Dharmakīrti allowed the work to exist.

SĀKYABODHI (ABOUT 675 A.D.).

108. Sākyabodhi¹ is stated to have been a pupil of Devendrabodhi. He seems to have lived about 675 A.D. He was the author of the following work :—

109. The *Pramāṇa-vārtika* (-pañjikā)-tikā, called in Tibetan: Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-ḥgrel-gyi-ḥgrel-bśad, which is an annotation on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika*-pañjikā of Devendrabodhi. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² which covers volumes Je and Ņe of the Tangyur, Mdo. The translation was prepared by the interpreter Dge-wahi-blo gros.

VINĪTA DEVA (ABOUT 700 A.D.).

110. Vinīta Deva,³ called in Tibetan Dul-lha, lived in Nālanda during the time of king Lalita Candra, son of Govi Candra, and Dharmakīrti died during the time of Govi Candra. Vimala Candra, the father of Govi Candra, was married to the sister of Bhartṛhari, who sprang from the ancient royal family of Malwa. Supposing this Bhartṛhari to be identical with the famous grammarian of that name who died in 651—652 A.D.,⁴ we may place his contemporary Govi Candra in the middle of the 7th century A.D. This is exactly the time when Dharmakīrti died. Hence we may conclude that Lalita Candra, son of Govi Candra, flourished towards the end of the 7th century A.D. Vinīta Deva, contemporary of Lalita Candra, must also have lived about this time, a view which harmonises with the date of Dharmakīrti on whose works Vinīta Deva wrote commentaries.

Vinīta Deva, who was the famous author of the *Samayabhedoparacana-cakra*, wrote the following works on Logic :—

¹ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, p. 187.

² I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim in 1907.

³ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, pp. 195—198, 272; *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited by Sarat Chandra Das, pp. xlvi, 108.

⁴ Vide Takakusu's *I-tsing*, p. lvii.

111. **Nyāya-bindu-ṭikā**, called in Tibetan : **Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa-rgya-cher-hgrel-wa**, which is a detailed commentary on the **Nyāyabindu** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but a Tibetan translation¹ of it exists in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **She**, folios 1—43. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage **Jina Mitra** and the interpreter of **Shu-chen** named **Vande-ye-śeṣ-sde**.

112. **Hetu-bindu-ṭikā**, called in Tibetan : **Gtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa-rgya-cher-hgr l-wa**, which is a detailed commentary on the **Hetu-bindu** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **She**, folios 116—205. The translation was prepared by the Indian teacher **Prajñā Varma** and the interpreter-monk of **Shu-chen** named **Dpal-brtsegs-rakṣita**.

113. **Vāda-nyāya-vyākhyā**, called in Tibetan : **Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hgrel-wa**, which is a commentary on the **Vāda-nyāya** (otherwise called **Tarka-nyāya**) of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **Ze**, folios 39—65. The work opens thus : “Who is self-perfected in sweet logical discussion, supreme in patience, affection, charity and self-restraint, and who is the most excellent of logicians—to him (Buddha) bowing down I compose a commentary on the text of **Vāda-nyāya**.”

114. **Sambandha-parikṣā-ṭikā**, called in Tibetan **Hbrel-pa-brtag-paḥi-rgya-cher-bśad-pa**, which is a copious commentary on the **Sambandhaparikṣā** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the **Tangyur**, **Mdo**, **Ze**, folios 1—24. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage **Jñāna-garbha** and the Tibetan interpreter **Vande-nam-mkhaṣ**. The work opens thus :—

“Who is entirely unconnected with the world, and is yet designated as the supreme teacher of it—to him bowing down fully I explain the **Sambandha-parikṣā**.”

115. **Ālambana-parikṣā-ṭikā**, called in Tibetan **Dmigs-pa-brtag-paḥi-hgrel-bśad**, is an annotation on the **Ālambana-parikṣā** of **Dignāga**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁵ in the

¹ This work was brought down to Calcutta by the British Mission to Tibet during 1904. I examined it by permission of the Government of India. It is now deposited in the British Museum, London.

² I examined this work by permission of the Government of India when it was brought down to Calcutta by the British Mission to Tibet, 1904.

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁵ I have consulted the India Office copy.

Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ze, folios 186—200. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Sākya-simha and the interpreter Vande-*dpal-rtsegs* of Shu-chen. The work opens thus:—

“Meditating on the merciful Omniscient One, and saluting him by my head, I compose the *Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-tīkā*.”

It ends thus:—

“Here is finished the *Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-tīkā*, which is a clean work of the teacher Vinita Deva who weighed all sorts of *ālambaṇa* (objects of thought), and is a lion of speakers confounding the brains of the Tīrthika-elephants.”

116. *Santānāntara-siddhi-tīkā*, called in Tibetan: *Rgyud-gshan-grub-paḥi-bṡrel-bśad*, being a commentary on the *Santānāntara-siddhi* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Tshe, folios 1—21. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Viśuddha-simha and the interpreter of Shu-chen named *Dpal-rtsegs-rakṣita*.

CANDRA GOMIN (ABOUT 700 A.D.).

117. Candra Gomin,² called in Tibetan: *Zla-wa-dge-bśñen*, was born in a Kṣatriya family in the east at Vārendra (modern Rajshahye in Bengal). He was endowed with a very keen intellect and acquired distinction in literature, grammar, logic, astronomy, music, fine arts and the science of medicine. Under Ācārya Sthiramati he learnt the Sūtra and Abhidharma Piṭakas of the Buddhist scripture, and was converted to Buddhism by the Vidyādhara Ācārya Aśoka.³ He had an ardent faith in the Buddhist god Avalokiteśvara and the goddess Tārā.⁴ He was offered in marriage a daughter of the king of Nālendra. Being told that she was named Tārā, which was the name of his tutelary deity, he thinking it improper to accept her hands shrank from her with fear. Upon this the king of Vārendra became angry and put Candra Gomin into a chest which was thrown into the Ganges. The chest was carried down until it stopped at an island at the place where the Ganges flows into the ocean. Candra Gomin with deep reverence offered a prayer to goddess Tārā by whose blessing he got out of the chest. He

¹ I have consulted the India Office xylograph of the Tibetan version.

² Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 145—146, 148—158; and Pag-sam-jon-zang edited in the original Tibetan by Sarat Chandra Das, Calcutta, pp. 95 96.

³ Ācārya Aśoka was the author of a logical treatise called *Sāmānya-dūṣaṇa-dikprakāśikā*, a short treatise on the refutation of generality, lately recovered from Nepal.

⁴ For Candra Gomin's “Ārya-Tārā-antarbali-vidhi” vide Satischandra Vidyabhusana's *Sragdharā-stotra*, Introduction, pp. xx, xxi.

resided in the island which was in course of time named Candra-dvīpa¹ or the island of Candra. He as a Buddhist devotee (*upāsaka*) established there stone-images of Avalokiteśvara and Tārā. At first only fishermen settled in the island, but afterwards other people came to live there. Gradually the island became a town.

118. Candra Gomin thereupon went to Ceylon and on his way back found in Southern India in the house of Vararuci, Nāga-Sēṣa's (Patañjali's) Bhāṣya on Pāṇini's grammar. Finding that it contained "many words but few thoughts," he himself composed a commentary on Pāṇini, which was named Candra-vyākaraṇa.² Afterwards he came to Nālandā—the store-house of knowledge—and met there Candra-kīrti, the famous commentator on the Mādhyamika Philosophy of Ārya Nāgārjuna. Candra Gomin himself was a follower of the Yogācāra system expounded by Ārya Asaṅga. While Candra Kīrti and Candra Gomin entered upon philosophical discussions people used to observe: "Alas! the text of Ārya Nāgārjuna is medicine to some but poison to others, whereas the text of invincible Ārya Asaṅga is very ambrosia to all men." It is further stated that into a well at Nālandā Candra Gomin threw the original manuscript of his grammar, thinking that it was not better than the one which Candra Kīrti had written. At that time Tārā and Avalokiteśvara appeared before him saying: "Though Candra Kīrti is overwhelmed with pride as a sage, your work is more useful than all others and will do immense good to the world." They raised the manuscript from the well, which was

¹ Candra dvīpa is situated in the district of Barisal in South-eastern Bengal at a place where the Padmā, which is a main outlet of the Ganges, falls into the ocean. Vāreudra in which Candra Gomin was born is identical with the Rajshahye division in North-eastern Bengal through which the Padmā flows.

² For Candra-vyākaraṇa vide Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's "Sanskrit works on Literature, Grammar, Rhetoric and Lexicography, as preserved in Tibet" in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, new series, Vol. iii, No. 2, 1907. The Candra-vyākaraṇa in the original Sanskrit has been printed in Germany.

³ ཀྱུ་མ་འཕགས་པ་རྒྱ་སྐད་གཞུང་།

ལ་ལའི་སྐད་ལ་ལ་ལའི་དུག།

མི་ཕམ་འཕགས་པ་ཐོགས་མེད་གཞུང་།

སྐྱེ་བོ་ཀུན་ལ་བདུད་ཅི་ཅིད། (Pag-sam-jon-zang, p. 96).

thence reputed as "Candra's well" (in Sanskrit: Candra-kūpa and in Tibetan: Tsandrahi-khron-pa), the water of which was wont to be drunk by people in the belief that thereby their intellect would become sharp. Candra Kīrti was, however, a great admirer of Candra Gomin. When the latter arrived at Nālandā the monks refused to give him a reception, saying that it was not proper for priests to welcome a mere devotee (*upāsaka*). Hearing this Candra Kīrti brought three chariots, two of which were occupied by himself and Candra Gomin respectively, while in the third was placed an image of Mañjuśrī, the Buddhist god of learning. The chariots passed through the town in a great procession attended by the whole body of priests who came really to recite hymns to Mañjuśrī, but apparently to accord a fitting welcome to Candra Gomin.¹

119. Candra Gomin lived at a time when Śīla, son of Harṣa, reigned. During this time king Śimha of the Licchavi dynasty reigned in Vārendra. The famous poet Ravi Gupta was a contemporary of Harṣa, son of Śimha. Śrī Harṣa seems to be the same as king Harṣa Vardhana who was a contemporary of Hwen-tsang and reigned in 647 A.D. His son Śīla seems, on a rough calculation, to have reigned in 700 A.D., when his contemporary Candra Gomin must also have lived. Jaina Hema Candra Sūri who lived during 1088—1172 A.D., refers to Candra Gomin while Jayāditya,² the famous author of the *Kāśikā-vṛtti*, who died in 661—662 A.D.,³ does not mention him. This may be explained on the supposition that Candra Gomin lived after Jayāditya, but preceded Hema Candra.

120. Candra Gomin was the author of the following work on Logic: *Nyāyāloka-siddhi*, called in Tibetan: *Rigs-pa-grub-pahis-gron-ma*, signifying "a lamp of logical reasoning." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Ze, folios 200—201. The translation was prepared by Paṇḍita Śrī Sita-prabha and the interpreter-monk Vairocana.

RAVI GUPTA (ABOUT 725 A.D.).

121. Ravi Gupta,⁵ called in Tibetan: *Ñi-ma-sbaṣ*, was born in Kāśmīra. He was a great poet, dialectician and Tāntric

¹ Vide *Pag sam-jon-zang*, pp. 95-96.

² Vide Professor F. Kielhorn's "Indra Gomin and other grammarians" in the *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. xv, June 1886, pp. 181, 184.

³ Vide Takakusu's *I-tsing*, p. lvii.

⁴ I have used the India Office copy.

⁵ Vide Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 146, 147, 243; and *Pag sam-jon-zang*, part i, pp. 90, 101, 118, xxxvii.

teacher, who established 12 great religious schools in his native country and Magadha. He was a contemporary of king Bhārṣa of Vārendra, and flourished a little later than Candra Gomin, who had lived during the time of Bhārṣa's father Simha. Ravi Gupta must have lived in the first quarter of the eighth century A.D., for his disciple the famous Tāntric monk Sarvajña Mitra¹ lived in the middle of that century. Ravi Gupta was the author² of the following work on Logic:—

122. *Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti*, called in Tibetan: *Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-pa*, which is an annotation on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, *Mdo, Tshe*, folios 132-252.

JINENDRABODHI (ABOUT 725 A.D.).

123. In the Tangyur, *Mdo, Re*, there is the Tibetan version of a work called *Viśālāmala vati-nāma-pramāṇa-samuccaya-tīkā*. This version was prepared by the Tibetan interpreter *Ḍo-rje-rgyal-mtshan* with the assistance of *Ḍpal-ldan-blo-gros*.

124. The author of the original work was Jinendrabodhi, called in Tibetan *Rgyal-ḍwañ-blo-gros*, who was a venerable countryman of the *Bodhisattva* (*Dignāṣa*?). He is perhaps the same person who wrote the well-known *Nyāsa* on the grammar of Pāṇini in the eighth century A.D.

SĀNTA RAKṢITA (749 A.D.).

125. *Sānta Rakṣita*,⁴ called in Tibetan: *Shi-wa-htsho*, was born in the royal family of *Za-hor* [in Bengal?]. The exact date of his birth is unknown, but it is stated that he was born at the time of *Go Pāla* who reigned up to 705 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B) and died at the time of *Dharma Pāla* who became king in 765 A.D. He followed the *Svatantra Mādhyamika* school, and was a Professor at *Nālandā* (*vide* Appendix A). He visited Tibet at the invitation of King *Khri-srou-deu-tsan* who was born in 728 A.D., and died in 864 A.D. The king, with the assistance of *Sānta Rakṣita*, built in 749 A.D. the monastery of *Sam-ye*⁵ in

¹ *Vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Sragdharā Stotra*, Introduction, p. xxx, printed in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series of Calcutta.

² For Ravi Gupta's *Ārya-kosa* see Rockhill's *Buddha*, p. 228; and for his works on *Tantra*, see Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Sragdharā Stotra*, Introduction, pp. v-vii.

³ I have consulted the copy of the India Office, London.

⁴ *Vide* *Pag-sam-jon-zang* edited by Sarat Chandra Das, C.I.E., Calcutta, p. 112.

⁵ *Vide* Csoma de Koros's *Tibetan Grammar*, p. 183; Sarat Chandra Das in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, 1881, Part I, p. 226; and Waddell's *Lamaism*, p. 28.

Tibet, modelled after the Odantapura Vihāra of Magadha. Sam-ye was the first Buddhist monastery in Tibet and Śānta Rakṣita was its first abbot. He worked in Tibet for 13 years, that is, until 762 A.D. He was known there under the name of Ācārya Bodhisattva, and was the author of the following works on Logic:—

126. *Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitārtha*, called in Tibetan : *Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hbrel-pa-don-rnam-par-hbyed-pa*, an elaborate commentary on the *Vāda-nyāya* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ze, folios 65—186, and in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Tshe, folios 21—131. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Kumāra-śrī-bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter-monks venerable *Seṣ-rah* and *Hbro-sen-dkar* (who was a native of the province of *Hbro* or *Dö*) in the holy monastery of *Bsam-yaṣ* (Sam-ye). The work opens thus:—

“Who constantly dispersing darkness by the ray of the heap of various pure precious qualities, exerted himself for the sake of obtaining the fruits of desire of various sentient beings and rejoiced to do good to the entire world—to that Mañju-śrī bowing down in reverence, I compose this concise and stainless *Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitārtha*.”

127. *Tattva-saṃgraha-kārikā*, called in Tibetan : *De-kho-na-ñid-bḥdus-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa*, a work containing memorial verses on a summary of the *Tattvas*. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, *He*, folios 1—146. The translation was prepared by the Indian Paṇḍita Guṇākara-śrī-bhadra (belonging to the religious circle first instituted by the great king Lalitāditya in the incomparable city of Kāśmīra) and the great Tibetan interpreter the Śākya monk *Lha-bla-ma-shi-wa-hod* in the province of Guge (S.-W. Tibet). The work reviews various systems of philosophy such as the Sāṃkhya, Jaina, etc.³

¹ I have consulted the xylograph of this work contained in the India Office, London.

² I have consulted the work in the monastery of Labrang, Sikkim, which I visited in June 1907. For a detailed account of this work *vide* my “Sāṃkhya Philosophy in the Land of the Lamas” in the *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, new series, Vol. iii, No. 8.

³ The *Tattvasaṃgraha* herein noticed is quite different from the *Tattvasamāsa*, a Brāhmanic work on the Sāṃkhya philosophy, a manuscript of which is contained in the library of the Asiatic Society of Bengal.

Dr George Bühler, during his explorations of the *Brhat-jñāna-koṣa* in the temple of *Parśva-nātha* at Jesalmir, found in 1873 a *Polhi*, consisting of 189 ancient palm-leaves showing the characters of the 12th or 13th century, and bearing on the outside corner the title *Kamala-śīla-tarka*

128. The subject-matter of the work begins thus:—

“From *Pradhāna* (the primordial matter or nature) possessed of entire powers all sorts of effects are produced.”

(vide Dr. G. Bühler's correspondence with Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., published in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta*, Vol. i, part ii, p. x). The real name of the work, according to Dr. Bühler, is *Tarka-saṅgraha*. Now, this *Tarkasaṅgraha* is nothing but *Tattvasaṅgraha* of Śānta Raksita with the commentary, by Kamala Stīla. The introductory part (*Māṅgala*) of the *Tarka-saṅgraha*, as noticed by Dr. Bühler, runs as follows:—

प्रकृतौशोभयात्मादि [क्रियया । रक्षितं चलम् ।

कर्मा तत्फलसम्बन्ध व्यवस्थादिसमाश्रयम् ॥

गणद्रव्यक्रियाजातिसमवायाद्यपाधिभिः ।

शून्यमारोपिताकारशब्दप्रत्ययगोचरम् ॥

स्पष्टलक्षणसंयुक्त प्रमाद्वितयनिश्चितम् ।

अणोयसापि नांशेन मिश्रौभूतापरात्मकम् ॥

असंग्रान्तिमनाद्यन्तं प्रतिविम्बादिमंनिभम् .

सर्वप्रपञ्च सन्दोहनिर्मलमगतं परैः ॥

स्वतन्त्रश्रुतिनिःसङ्गो जगद्धितविधित्सया ।

अनल्पकल्पासंख्येय सात्त्विकभूत महोदयः ॥

यः प्रतौत्यसमुत्पादं जगाद वदतां वरः ।

तं सर्वज्ञं प्रणम्यायं क्रियते तर्कसंग्रहः ॥

The introductory part in the *Tattvasaṃgraha* is identical with the above as is evident from the Tibetan version extracted below :—

རང་བཞིན་དབང་ལྷན་གཉིས་ཀ་དང་།།

བདག་སོགས་བྱེད་དང་བྱལ་གཡོ་བ།།

ཕ་ས་དང་དེ་འབྲས་འབྲེལ་བ་དག།

ནུམ་པར་བཞུག་ལ་སོགས་པའི་དེན།།

ཡོན་ཏན་རྣམ་དང་བྱ་བ་དང་།

འཛིན་པ་དང་འདྲ་སོགས་བྱུང་པར་གྱིས།

ཕྱོང་དང་ཕྱོད་པཏགས་ནམ་ཅན་ནི།།

ཐཱ་དང་ཤེས་པའི་སྒྲིབ་ཡུལ་ཅན།།

The work is divided into 31 chapters, viz. : (1) examination of nature (in Sanskrit: Svabhāva-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Rañ-b-shin-brtag-pa); (2) examination of the sense-organs (in Sanskrit: Indriya-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Dwan-phyug-brtag-pa); (3) examination of both (in Sanskrit: Ūbhaya-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Gñig-ka-brtag-pa); (4) examination of the theory that the world is self-existent (in Sanskrit: Jagat-svabhāva-vāda-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Hgro-wa-rau-b-shin-du-smra wa-brtag-pa); (5) examination of Brahma, the presiding deity of sound (in Sanskrit: Śabda-Brahma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Sgrahi-tshaṅ pa-brtag-pa); (6) examination of the soul (in Sanskrit: Puruṣa-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Skyes-bu-brtag-pa); (7) examination of the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika doctrines of the soul (in Sanskrit: Nyāya-vaiśeṣika-parikalpita-puruṣa-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Rigs-pa-can-dañ-bye-brag-pas-kun-tu-brtags-paḥi-skyes-bu-brtag-pa); (8) examination of the Mīmāṃsaka doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit: Mīmāṃsaka-kalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Spyod-pa-pas-brtags-paḥi-bdag-brtag-pa); (9) examination of Kapila's doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit: Kapila-parikalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Ser-skya-pas-kun-tu-brtags-paḥi-bdag-brtag-pa); (10) examination of the Digambara Jaina doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit: Digambara-parikalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Nam-mkhahi-gos-can-gyis-kun-tu-brtags-paḥi-bdag-brtag-pa); (11) examination of the Upaniṣad-doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit: Upaniṣad-kalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan:

མཚན་ཉིད་གསལ་དང་ལྷན་པ་ཡི།

ཚད་ལ་གཉིས་གྱིས་གདན་ལ་དབབ།

ཆ་གས་ཤིན་དུ་སྤྲོ་བས་ཀྱང་།

འདྲིས་པ་གཞན་གྱི་བདག་ཉིད་མིན།

མི་འཕྲོ་ཕྱོག་མཐའ་མེད་པ་ཅན།

གཞུགས་བརྟན་ལ་སོགས་དག་དང་འདྲ།

སྒྲིམ་པ་ཀུན་གྱི་ཚོགས་དང་བྲལ།

གཞན་གྱི་དོགས་པ་མཛད་བཞིད་པ།

U-pa-ni-sa-di-kas-hrtags-pa_{hi}-bdag-hrtag-pa); (12) examination of the Vātsīputra doctrine of the soul (in Sanskrit: Vātsīputra-kalpita-ātma-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Gnas-ma_{hi}-bus-bdag-hrtag-pa); (13) examination of the permanence of entities (in Sanskrit: Sthira-padārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Brtan-pa_{hi}-dno_g-po-hrtag-pa); (14) examination of the relation between *Karma* and its effect (in Sanskrit: Karma-phala-sambandha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Las-da_ñ-hbras-bu_{hi}-hbrel-pa-hrtag-pa); (15) examination of the meaning of the word 'substance' (in Sanskrit: Dravya-padārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Rdsas-kyi-tshig-gi-don-hrtag-pa); (16) examination of the meaning of the word 'quality'; (in Sanskrit: Guṇa-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Yon-tan-gyi-tshig-gi-don-hrtag-pa); (17) examination of the meaning of the word *Karma* (in Sanskrit: Karma-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Las-kyi-tshig-gi-don-hrtag-pa); (18) examination of the meaning of the word generality or genus (in Sanskrit: Sāmānya-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Spyi_{hi}-tshig-gi-don-hrtag-pa); (19) examination of the meaning of the words 'generality,' and 'particularity' (in Sanskrit: Sāmānya-viśeṣa-śabdārtha-parīkṣā, in Tibetan: Spyi-da_ñ-bye-brag-gi-tshig-gi-don-hrtag-pa); (20) examination of the meaning of the

བསྐལ་པ་གངས་མེད་མི་ཉུང་བས།།

ཐུགས་རྩི་ཆེན་པོ་འི་བདག་གུང་བ།།

དེ་ནི་ཅིང་འབྲེལ་བར་འབྲུང་བ་ནི།།

གང་གིས་གསུངས་པ་སྣུ་བའི་མཆོག།

ཀུན་མཁྱེན་དེ་ལ་ཕྱག་འཆོལ་ནས།།

དེ་ཉིད་ནམས་ནི་བསྟུ་བར་བྱ།།

Dr. Bühler further observes that the first section of the Tarkasaṃgraha contains ईश्वर-परौक्षा (examination of God), कपिलकल्पितात्म-परौक्षा (examination of Kapila's doctrine of the soul), औपनिषदकल्पितात्म-परौक्षा (examination of the soul according to the Upaniśads), अक्षरभाव-परौक्षा (examination of permanent entity), etc. The last colophon appears to him to be स्वतः प्रामाण्यवाद (examination of the doctrine of self-evidence). These are the very subjects treated in the Tattvasaṃgraha. So the two works are identical.

word 'co-existent cause' (in Sanskrit: *Samavāya-sābdārtha-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Hdu-wah-tshig-don-brtag-pa*); (21) examination of the meaning of the word 'sound' (in Sanskrit: *Sābdārtha-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Sgra-yi-don-brtag-pa*); (22) examination of the definition of perception (in Sanskrit: *Pratyakṣa-lakṣaṇa-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Mñon-sum-gyi-mtshan-ñid-brtag-pa*); (23) examination of inference (in Sanskrit: *Anumānaparīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Rjes-su-dpag-pa-brtag-pa*); (24) examination of other kinds of valid knowledge (in Sanskrit: *Pramāṇāntara-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Tsha-d-ma-shan-brtag-pa*); (25) examination of the doctrine of evolution (in Sanskrit: *Vivartavāda-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Hgyur-war-smra-wa-brtag-pa*); (26) examination of the three times (in Sanskrit: *Kāla-traya-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Dug-gsum-brtag-pa*); (27) examination of continuity of the world (in Sanskrit: *Samsāra-santati-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Hjig-rten-rgyud-pa-brtag-pa*); (28) examination of external objects (in Sanskrit: *Vāhyārtha-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Phyi-rol-gyi-don-brtag-pa*); (29) examination of Śruti or Scripture (in Sanskrit: *Śruti-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Thos-pa-brtag-pa*); (30) examination of self-evidence (in Sanskrit: *Svataḥ-prāmāṇya-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Ran-las-tsha-d-ma-drtag-pa*); and (31) examination of the soul which sees things beyond the range of senses (in Sanskrit: *Anyendriyātītārthārśana-puruṣa-parīkṣā*, in Tibetan: *Gshan-gyi-dwan-po-las-hdag-pa-brtag-pa*).

KAMALA ŚĪLA (ABOUT 750 A.D.).

129. Kamala Śīla,¹ also called Kamala Śrīla, was a follower of Sānta Rakṣita. He was for some time a Professor of Tantras in Nālandā whence he was (*vide* Appendix A) invited to Tibet by king Khri-sron-deu-tsan (728—736 A.D.). While in Tibet he vindicated the religious views of Guru Padma-sambhava and Sānta Rakṣita by defeating and expelling a Chinese monk named Mahāyāna Hoshang. He was of wide fame and the author of the following works:—

130. *Nyāya-bindu pūrva-pakṣe-saṃkṣipta*, called in Tibetan *Rigs-pa-brtag-pa*, *phyogs-sna-ma-mdor-bzod-pa*, a summary of criticisms on the Nyāyabindu of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation² in the Tangyur, *Mdo, She*, Folios 106—115. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage

¹ *Vide* Pag-sam-jon-zang, part 1, p. 112, edited by Sarat Chandra Das, and also the Journal of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. i, part 1, p. 10, and Waddell's *Lamaism*, p. 31.

² I have consulted the copy brought down by the British Mission to Tibet in 1904.

Viśuddha Simha and the interpreter monk of Shu-chen named Dpal-rtsegs-rakṣita.

131. Tattva-saṃgraha-pañjikā, called in Tibetan De-kho-na-nīd-ḥsdus-paḥi-dkaḥ-hgrel, a commentary on the Tattva-saṃgraha of Sānta Rakṣita. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ of part I of this work in the Tangyur, Mdo, He, Folios 146—400, and part II of it in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ye, Folios 1—385. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Devendra Bhadra and the interpreter monk Grags-hbyor-śes-rab.

KALYĀṆA RAKṢITA (ABOUT 829 A.D.).

132. Kalyāṇa Rakṣita,² called in Tibetan Dge-ḥsruṅ, was a great dialectician and teacher of Dharmottarācārya. He flourished during the reign of Mahārāja Dharma Pāla who died in 829 A.D. (*Vide* Appendix B). He was the author of the undermentioned works³ :—

133. Vāhyārtha-siddhi-kārikā, called in Tibetan phyi-rol-gyi-don-grub-pa-ces-bya-waḥi-tshig-leḥur, which signifies memorial verses on the reality of external things. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 202—210. The translation was prepared by the Vaibhāṣika teacher Jina Mitra of Kāśmīra and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Dpal-ḥrtsegs-rakṣita.

134. Śruti-parikṣā, called in Tibetan Thos-pa-ḥrtag-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa, which signifies 'memorial verses on the examination of Śruti or verbal testimony.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 210—211.

135. Anyāpoha-vicāra-kārikā, called in Tibetan Gshan-la-ḥrtag-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa, which signifies 'memorial verses on the determination of a thing by the exclusion of its opposites.' The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 211—213.

136. Īśvara bhaṅga-kārikā, called in Tibetan Dwaṅ-phyug-hjiḡ-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa, which signifies 'memorial verses

¹ I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang, Sikkim, which I visited in June 1907.

² *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 216—219; and *Pag sam-jon-zang*, p. 114. The particle 'ḥsruṅ' signifies "protected" and is an equivalent for Sanskrit "Rakṣita." But Schiefner has taken it as an equivalent for "Gupta." This does not seem to be correct, for the Tibetan equivalent for Gupta is "śbas."

³ I have consulted Kalyāṇa Rakṣita's works in volume Ze of the Tangyur lent to me by the India Office, London.

on the refutation of God.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 214—215.

DHARMOTTARĀCĀRYA (ABOUT 847 A.D.).

137. Dharmottara¹ (Ācārya Dharmottara or Dharmottarācārya) called in Tibetan Chos-mchog, was a pupil of Kalyāṇa Rakṣita and of Dharmākara Datta of Kāśmīra. He appears to have flourished in Kāśmīra while Vanapāla was reigning in Bengal about 847 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B), and is mentioned by the Jaina philosophers Mallavādin the author of *Dharmottara-ṭippanaka* about 962 A.D.² and Ratnaprabha Sūri³ the famous author of *Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā* dated 1181 A.D. Dharmottara was the author of the following works :—

138. *Nyāya-bindu-ṭīkā*, called in Tibetan Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-rgya-cher-hgre¹-wa, a detailed commentary on the *Nyāya-bindu* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work was preserved in the Jaina temple of Śāntinātha, Cambay, and has been published by Professor Peterson in the *Bibliotheca Indica* series of Calcutta. There exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the Tangyur, Mdo, She, Folios 43—106. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Jñāna-garbha and an interpreter-monk of Shu-chen named Dharmāloka, and afterwards recast by the Indian sage Sumati-kīrti and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Blo-dan-ṣes-rab. *Nyāyabindu-ṭīkā* begins thus :—“ Sugata, the conqueror of lust, etc., has overcome this world, the source of series of evils beginning with birth : may his words dispelling the darkness of our mind attain glory.”⁵

¹ *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 225 ; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, p. 114.

² The Jaina logician Mallavādin (q. v.) wrote a gloss called *Dharmottara-tippanaka* on Dharmottarācārya's *Nyāyabindutīkā*. The year 884 in which Mallavādin flourished corresponds to 827 A.D. or 962 A.D. according as we take it to refer to *Vikrama-saṃvat* or *Saka-saṃvat*. On one supposition Mallavādin was a contemporary of Dharmottara and on the other he flourished a century later.

³ *अथ धर्मोत्तरानुसारी प्राद । प्रयोजनमादिवाक्येन साक्षादाख्यायते इति न चने ।* (*Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā*, p. 10, Jaina ya-ovijaya series of Benares).

⁴ I have consulted the copy brought down by the British Mission to Tibet during 1904. The Tibetan version has also been edited by F. J. Sherbatski and printed in Russia.

⁵ *अयं ज्ञानियमनप्रबन्ध प्रकृतिकेतीर्जगतो विजितुः ।*

रागादरागेः सुगतस्य वाचो मनसमस्य नवमादधानाः ॥

(*Nyāyabindutīkā*, Chap. I).

139. **Pramāṇa-parīkṣā**, called in Tibetan *Tshad-ma-brtag-pa*, signifying 'an examination of *Pramāṇa* or the sources of valid knowledge.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ¹ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Ze, Folios 215—237, as well as Folios 238—253. The translation was prepared by monk *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab*.

140. **Apoha-nāma-prakarāṇa**, called in Tibetan *Gshan-sel-wa*, signifying 'a treatise on the determination of a thing by the exclusion of its opposites.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ² in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Ze, Folios 254—266. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Bhāgyarāja and the interpreter-monk *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab*, in the incomparable city of Kāśmīra.

141. **Pāra-loka-siddhi**, called in Tibetan *Hjig-rten-pha-rol-grub-pa*, signifying 'proof of the world beyond.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ³ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Ze, Folios 266—270. The translation was prepared by the great Paṇḍita Bhāgyarāja and the interpreter-monk *Tshab ṅi-ma* grags during the lifetime of *Sri Haṛṣa Deva* (king of Kāśmīra, 1089—1101 A.D.) in the great incomparable city of Kāśmīra.

The work begins thus:—

“Some say that the world beyond is possessed of the characteristics of a complete separation from the link of consciousness which began from before birth and continued after death, etc.”

142. **Kṣaṇa bhaṅga-siddhi**, called in Tibetan *Ška-l-cig-ma-hjig-pa-grub-pa*, signifying 'proof of the momentariness of things.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ⁴ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Ze, Folios 270—282. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Bhāgyarāja and the interpreter-monk *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab*.

143. **Pramāṇa-viniścaya-ṭīkā**, called in Tibetan *Tshad-ma-rnam-ñes-kyi-ṭīkā*, which is a commentary on the *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ⁵ in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, Dse, folio 346 f, and *We*, Folios 1—188. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Parahita Bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter *Blo-lḍan-śeṣ-rab* in the model city of Kāśmīra. In the concluding lines of the work

¹ I have consulted the India Office copy.

² I have consulted the India Office copy.

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁵ I have consulted the India Office copy.

MUKTĀ-KUMBHA (AFTER 847 A.D.).

145. The *Kṣaṇa-bhaṅga-siddhi-vyākhyā* is called in Tibetan *Ska l-cig-ma-hjug-grub-paḥi-rnam-hgrel*. The Sanskrit original of the work appears to be lost, but a Tibetan translation ³ is embodied in the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*, *Ze*, *Folios 282—301*. This version was prepared by the Indian sage *Vināyaka* and the interpreter-monk *Grags-hbyor-ṣes-rab*.

146. Guṇa-ratna Sūri,⁴ the famous Jaina author of the *Ṣaḍdarśana-samuccaya-vṛtti*, who lived in 1409 A.D., mentions the *Tarkatīkā* of Arcāṭa.⁵ Arcāṭa is also mentioned by the Jaina philosopher Ratnaprabhā Sūri,⁶ the well-known author of *Syādvādaratnāvatarikā*, dated 1181 A.D. In the Jaina *Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti* ⁷ it appears that Arcāṭa criticised Dharmot-tarācārya who lived about 847 A.D. Roughly speaking he flourished in the 9th century A.D.

147. **Hetu bindu-vivarana**, called in Tibetan **Gtan-tshigs-tshigs-pahi-hgrel-wa**, being a commentary on the **Hetu-bindu** of **Dharmakīrti**. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be

We, Folios 188).

² The name Mukṭākumbha is restored from Tibetan.

³ I have consulted the work belonging to the India Office, London.

⁴ *Vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's *Jaina Logic* under "Gūṇaratna Sūri."

⁵ Vide Dr. Suali's edition of the *Ṣaddar'ana-samuccaya-vṛtti*, chapter on *Bauddha dar-ana*.

⁶ **स्यद्वंद्वारत्ननवतारः पुनराह । इह प्रेक्षावतां प्रवृत्तिः प्रयोजनवन्तथा व्याप्ता... ।**
(*Syādvādvāra-ratnāvatārikā*, chap. i, p. 17, published in *Jaina Yāsovijaya*
granthamālā of Benares).

7 *Vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana's edition of the Nyāyāvātāra with vivṛti which is being published by the Indian Research Society of Calcutta.

lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, She, Folios 205—375. It is divided into four chapters treating respectively of (1) Identity (in Tibetan : Raṅ-bshin, and in Sanskrit Svabhāva); (2) Effect (in Tibetan : hbras-bu, and in Sanskrit : Kārya); (3) Non-perception (in Tibetan : Mi-dmigs-pa, and in Sanskrit : Anupalabdhi); and (4) Explanation of Six Characteristics (in Tibetan : Mtshan-ñid-drug-bśa-l-pa, and in Sanskrit : Ṣaḍ-lakṣaṇa-vyākhyā). In the beginning of the work it is stated that Arcaṭa was a Brāhmaṇa, and from the concluding part it appears that he lived in Kāśmīra. The Tibetan version ends thus :—

“In the city of Kāśmīra, the pith of Jambudvīpa, the commentary (on the work) of Dharmakīrti, who was the best of sages, was translated. From this translation of Pramāṇa the pith of holy doctrines, let the unlearned derive wisdom.”²

DĀNAŚĪLA (ABOUT 899 A.D.).

148. Dānaśīla,³ also called Dānaśrīla, was born in Kāśmīra about 899 A.D., when Mahī Pāla was reigning in Bengal. He was a contemporary of Parahita Bhadra, Jina Mitra, Saivajña Deva and Tilopa. He visited Tibet and co-operated in the propaganda of the translations of Sanskrit books into Tibetan. He was the author of the following work on Logic :—

149. Pustaka-pāṭhopāya, called in Tibetan Glegs-bam-bkḷag-paḥi-thabs, signifying the method of reading books. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folio 270. The translation was prepared by the author himself.

¹ The volume She, containing this work, was brought down by the British Mission to Tibet in 1904. I borrowed it from the Government of India.

² འཇམ་གླིང་སྣིང་བོ་ཁ་ཆེན་གྱི་བྲུང་བྲུང་།
མཁས་པའི་སྣིང་བོ་ཆེན་གྱི་གྲགས་པའི་འབྲེལ་།
དམ་ཆོས་སྣིང་བོ་ཆེན་མ་བསྐྱར་བ་ལས་།
སྣིང་བོ་ཆེན་པ་རྣམས་ཀྱི་སྣིང་བོར་ཤོག་།

(Tangyur, Mdo, She, folio 375).

³ Vide Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 225—226; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, p. xlv.

⁴ I have consulted the India Office copy.

JINA MITRA (ABOUT 899 A.D.).

150. Jina Mitra¹ was a native of Kāśmīra who, together with Sarvajña Deva, Dāna-sīla and others, visited Tibet and helped the Tibetans in the work of translating Sanskrit books into Tibetan. Jina Mitra lived about 899 A.D.,² when his contemporary king Khri-ral (or Ral-pa-can) of Tibet and Mahī Pala of Bengal, died. He wrote the undermentioned work on Logic :—

151. Nyāya-bindu-piṇḍārtha, called in Tibetan Rigs-pahi-thigs-pahi-don-bḍus-pa, which contains the purport of Dharmakīrti's Nyāyabindu. The Sanskrit original of this work is lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, She, Folios 115—116. The translation was prepared by the Indian teacher Surendrabodhi, and the interpreter of Shuchen, named Vando-ye-śes-sde.

PRAJÑĀKARA GUPTA (ABOUT 940 A.D.).

152. Prajñākara Gupta,⁴ called in Tibetan Śeś-rab-hbyun-gnaś-sbas, lived at the time of Maha Pāla, who died in 940 A.D. He was a lay devotee and quite different from Prajñākara Maṭi, who was a monk and keeper of the southern gate of the university of Vikrama-sīlā during the reign of Canaka in 983 A.D. (Vide Appendix C). Prajñākara Gupta was the author of the following works :—

153. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra, called in Tibetan Tshad-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-rgyan, which is a commentary on the Pramāṇa-vārtika of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁵ which is divided into two parts. The first part extends over Folios 1—352 of volume Te, and the second part Folios 1—328 of volume She of the Tangyur, section Mdo. The translation was prepared by the great Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Bhāgya-rāja and the Tibetan interpreter Blo-ldan-śeś-rab. Subsequently, it was looked through by Sumati and the interpreter Blo-ldan-śeś-rab. The translation has the advantage of having been assisted by numerous sages of the great monastery of Vikrama-sīlā in Middle India,

¹ Vide Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, p. 226 ; and Pag-sam-jon-zang, pp. xcvi, 115.

² Vide Csoma de Koros's Tibetan Grammar, p. 183.

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ Vide Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 230, 235 ; and Pag-sam-jon-zang, p. 116.

⁵ I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim, which I visited in June, 1907.

under the supervision of the great wise Paṇḍita Śrī Sunaya-śrī Mitra and also of the wise Paṇḍita Kumāraśrī of the model city of Kāśmīra.

154. **Sahāvalambha-niścaya**, called in Tibetan **Lhan-cig-dmigs-pa-ñes-pa**, signifying “the ascertainment of objects and their knowledge arising together.” The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, **Mdo**, Ze, Folios 301—308. The translation was prepared by the Nepalese Paṇḍita Śānti Bhadra and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Śākya-hoḥ of the village of Seṇ-ḍkar in the province of **Hbro** (Do).

ĀCĀRYA JETĀRI (940—980 A.D.).

155. **Jetāri**² or **Ācārya Jetāri**, called in Tibetan **Dgra-las-rgyal-wa**, was born of a Brāhmaṇa family. His father, **Garbhapaḍa**, lived in **Vārendra** at the court of **Rājā Saṇātana**, who was a vassal to the Pala kings of Magadha. Being expelled by his kinsmen, **Jetāri** became a Buddhist devotee and worshipped **Mañjuśrī**, by whose grace he became a perfect master of sciences. He received from king **Maha Pāla** the royal diploma of Paṇḍita of the university of **Vikramaśilā**.

156. The famous **Dīpaṅkara** or **Śrījñāna Atiśa** is said, when very young, to have learnt five minor sciences from **Jetāri**. **Maha Pāla** reigned up to 940 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B), and **Dīpaṅkara** was born in 980 A.D.³ Their contemporary, **Jetāri**, must have lived between those dates.

He was the author of the following works⁴ on Logic:—

157. **Hetu-tattva-upadeśa**, called in Tibetan **ḡtan-tshigs-kyi-de-kho-na-ñid-ḡstan-pa**, signifying “instruction on the real nature of the middle term in a syllogism.” The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, **Mdo**, Ze, Folios 344—351. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Paṇḍita **Kumāra-kalasa** and the Tibetan interpreter-monk **Śākya-hoḥ**.

158. **Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya**, called in Tibetan **Chos-daṅ-chos-can-gtan-la-dwab-pa**, signifying “determination of the minor and major terms.” The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, **Mdo**, Ze, Folios 354—359.

¹ I have consulted the India Office copy.

² *Vide* Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 230—233; and *Pag-sam-jon-zang*, p. 116.

³ *Vide* the “Journal” of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. i, part i, p. 8.

⁴ The Volume Ze, of the Tangyur, **Mdo**, containing **Jetāri**'s works, was lent to me by the India Office, London.

159. **Bālāvatāra-tarka**, called in Tibetan **Bis-wa-hjug-paḥi-rtog-ge**, signifying “children’s introduction to Logic.” The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, **Mdo, Ze**, Folios 359—372. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage **Nāga Raksita** and the Tibetan interpreter of the province of **Sum-pa** (in Amdo) named **Dpal-mchog-dan-poḥi-rdo-rje**. The work begins thus:—

“Who by the lustre of his sermon has completely dispersed and cleared the veil of the gloom of ignorance, who is a single lamp to three worlds—may that Bhagavān long remain victorious.”¹ It consists of three chapters named respectively : (1) Perception ; (2) Inference for one’s own self ; and (3) Inference for the sake of others.

JINA (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

160. **Jina**, called in Tibetan **Bgyal-wa-can**, was the author of the following work :—

Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭikā, called in Tibetan **Tshad-ma-rnam-hḡrel gyi rgyan-gyi-hḡrel-bśad**, a voluminous work, the Tibetan version of which occupies volumes **De** and **Ne** of the Tangyur, section **Mdo**. This version was prepared by **Pandita Dīpankara** of **Vikramaśilā** (who arrived in Tibet in 1040 A.D.) and the Tibetan interpreter, **Byau-chub-šeṣ-rab** of **Shan-shun**.

161. **Jina**, the author of the original work, is probably the same as **Jina Bhadra** of **Koṅkana**,² who was a contemporary of **Vāgīśvarakīrti**, about 983 A.D. (*Vide* Appendix C).

JÑĀNA-ŚRĪ (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

162. **Jñāna-śrī**, or rather **Jñāna-śrī Mitra**³ (probably the same as **Jñāna-śrī Bhadra**, who worked in **Kāśmīra**), was born in **Gauḍa**. He was at first admitted into the **Srāvaka** school of

།གང་གིས་གསུང་རབ་འོད་ཟེར་གྱི་ཐུག་གིས་།

ཐུན་པའི་རབ་རིབ་རྣམ་པར་གྲོལ་མཛད་གསལ།།

ས་གསུམ་བཞས་ན་སྦྱོན་མ་གཞིག་བྱ་ཡི།།

བཞེས་ཐུན་འདས་དེ་ཡུན་རིང་གྲུལ་གཏར་ཞིག།།

(Tangyur, **Mdo, Ze**, folio 359).

² *Vide* Tārānātha’s *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, p. 235.

³ *Vide* Tārānātha’s *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, pp. 235—242 ; and *Pagsam-jon-zang*, pp. 117—120.

Buddhism, but afterwards imbibed faith in the Mahāvāna. Dīpaṅkara or Śrī-jñāna Atiśa (born in 980 A.D.) is said to have been much indebted to him. Jñāna-śrī Mitra was appointed a gate-keeper of the university of Vikramaśīlā by Canaka who reigned in Magadha up to 983 A.D. (*Vide* Appendices B and C). The Hindu philosopher Mādhavācārya in the 14th century quotes ¹ Jñāna-śrī, who is perhaps the same as Jñāna-śrī Mitra. He was the author of the following works on Logic :—

163. *Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā*,² called in Tibetan *Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-par-ñes-paḥi-hgrel-bṣad*, which is a commentary on the *Pramāṇa-viniścaya* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Dse, Folios 1—346, and We, Folios 188—322. The translation was prepared by the author³ himself with the co-operation of the interpreter-monk Choṣ-kyi-brtson-bgruṣ.

164. *Kārya-kāraṇa bhāva-siddhi*,⁴ called in Tibetan *Rgyu-daṅ-hbras-buḥi-ño-wo-grub-pa*, signifying ‘establishment of the relation of cause and effect.’ The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁵ in the Tangyur, *Mdo*, Ze, Folios 413—418. The translation was prepared by the great Indian sage Kumāra Kalasa and the interpreter-monk Śākya-hoḍ. Subsequently, it was re-touched and published by the Nepalese Paṇḍita Ananta-śrī and the interpreter-monk aforementioned.

165. *Tarka-bhāṣā*, called in Tibetan *Rtog-geḥi-skad*, signifying ‘technicalities of logic.’ The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁶ in

¹ *Vide* the Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha, chapter on Bauddha-darśana :—

तदुक्तं ज्ञानप्रिया

यत् सत् तत् कथिकं यथा जलधः समस्य भावा समौ ।

सत्ताशक्तिरिदार्थकर्मणि मितेः सिद्धेः सिद्धा न सा ॥

नाप्येकेव विधान्यथा परकृतेनापि क्रियादिर्भवेत् ।

द्वेषापि कणभङ्गसम्मतिरतः साध्ये च विप्राम्यनि ॥

² I have consulted the Tibetan version of this work in the monastery of Labrang in Sikkim.

³ The author of the *Pramāṇa-viniścaya-tīkā* is called Jñānaśrī Bhadra and also simply Jñāna-śrī. He is stated in the Colophon of the work to have been a native of Kāśmīra. *Vide* Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana’s “Indian Logic as preserved in Tibet, No. 3” in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, New Series, vol. iii, No. 7, 1907. Jñāna-śrī Mitra, of Cauda, seems to be the same as Jñāna-śrī Bhadra, of Kāśmīra, who may have left Cauda to live in Kāśmīra.

⁴ The author of this work is named Jñāna-śrī Mitra.

⁵ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁶ I have consulted the India Office copy.

the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 373—413. The translation was prepared by the interpreter-monk Dpal-ldan-blo-gros-brtan-pa. The work is divided into three chapters named respectively: (1) Perception; (2) Inference for one's own self; and (3) Inference for the sake of others. It begins thus:—"Bowling down to the teacher, the lord of the world, I elucidate Tarkabhāṣā (the technicalities of logic) for the sake of introducing children of small intellect to the system of Dharmakīrti."¹

RATNA VAJRA (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

166. Ratnavajra,² called in Tibetan Rin-chen-rdo-rje, was born in a Brāhmaṇa family in Kāśmīra. His ancestors were deeply versed in the śāstra of the Tīrthikas. His father, Hari Bhadra, was the first convert to Buddhism in his family. Ratnavajra, who was an upāsaka (lay devotee), studied by himself up to the 36th year of his life all the Buddhist sūtras, mantras, and sciences. After this he came to Magadha and Vajrāsana (Buddha-Gayā) where he beheld the face of Cakra-saṃvara, Vajravārāhī and many other deities, by whose grace he completely mastered the Buddhist śāstras. He received the royal diploma of the university of Vikramaśilā and was appointed a gate-keeper of the university (*vide* Appendix C). Afterwards he came back to Kāśmīra, whence he went through Udyāna (Kahul) to Tibet, where he was known by the name of Ācārya. He flourished during the reign of Canaka about 883 A.D. (*Vide* Appendices B and C). He was the author of the following work:—

167. **Yukti-prayoga**, called in Tibetan Rigs-pahi-sbyor-wa, signifying "application of reasoning." The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 372—373. The

ཐུ་མ་འཛིག་རྟོག་དབང་བཟུང་ནས།
 བྱིས་པ་ཡིན་གཞུངས་རྒྱུང་པ་རྣམས།
 ཆོས་བྱི་བྲགས་པའི་ལྷགས་མཉན་ཕྱིར།
 རྟོག་གཞི་སྐད་ནི་རབ་གསལ་བྱ།

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 373).

² *Vide* Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, p. 240.

³ I have consulted the Tibetan version in the possession of the India Office, London.

translation was prepared by the Indian sage Śrī Sūbhūti-sānta and the interpreter-monk of Shu-chen, named Tin-ñe-hdsin-bzan-po.

RATNĀKARA SĀNTI (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

168. Ratnākara Sānti¹ was known to the Tibetans as Ācārya Sānti or simply Sāntipa. He was ordained in the order of the Sarvāstivāda school of Odantapura, and learnt the Sūtra and Tantra at Vikramaśilā from Jetāri, Ratna-kīrti² and others. Thereafter he was appointed by king Canaka (who died in 983 A.D.) to be a gate-keeper of the University of Vikramaśilā (*vide* Appendix C), where he defeated the Tīrthika disputants. At the invitation of the king of Ceylon he visited that island where he spread the Buddhist doctrine. He was the author of a work on *Chanda* (prosody) called Chanda-ratnākara³ and of the following works⁴ on Logic:—

169. Viññapti-mātra siddhi, called in Tibetan Rnain-par-rig-pa-tsam-ñid-du-grub-pa, signifying 'establishment of a mere communication of knowledge.' The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 335—338. The translation was prepared by the Nepalese Paṇḍita Sānti Bhadra, and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Sākya-hod of the province of Hbro (Do). Subsequently, it was published by the same Paṇḍita and Klog-skya-śes-rab-brtsegs.

1.0. Antar-vyāpti,⁵ called in Tibetan Nān-gi-khyab-pa,

¹ *Vide* Turanatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schnefner, pp. 234, 235 and Pug-sam-jon-zang, pp. 117. ex. The Tibetan equivalent for the

name Ratnākara Sānti is རིན་རྒྱལ་འབྲུང་གཞན་ཞིབ།

² This Ratnakīrti is different from the sage of that name who was patronised by King Vimala Candra about 650 A.D. (*vide* Tūrānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schnefner, pp. 172, 174, and my discussion in art. 108 under the head Vinita Deva in the Buddhist Logic). This earlier Ratnakīrti, known through a commentary on the Madhyamakāvatāra, wrote Kalyāṇa-kāṇḍa and Dharmavinīcaya embodied in the Tangyur Mdo, Ku. The same Ratnakīrti was perhaps the author of Apohasiddhi and Kāṇḍabhāṅgasiddhi which are being published in the Bibliotheca Indica series of Calcutta under the editorship of M. M. Hara Prasād Sāstri. Two other works called Stūra-dūṣaṇa and Victrādvata-siddhi are ascribed to him.

³ For an account of the Chandoratnākara see Satishchandra Vidyabhusana's "Sanskrit works on Literature, Grammar, Rhetoric and Lexicography as preserved in Tibet" in J. A. S. B., new series, vol. III, no. 2, 1907.

⁴ The volume Ze of the Tangyur, section Mdo, containing Ratnākara Sānti's works, was lent to me by the India Office, London.

⁵ The Sanskrit original of 'Antarvyāpti' or more fully 'Antarvyāpti-

signifying 'internal inseparable connection.' It is embodied in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 338—344. The translation was prepared by the Indian sage Kumāra Kalasa and the interpreter-monk Sākya-hod.

VĀK-PRAJA (ABOUT 983 A.D.).

171. In the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 201—202 there is the Tibetan version¹ of the Sarvajña-siddhi-kārikā, called in Tibetan Thams-cad-ukhyen-pa-grub-paḥi-tshig-lehur-byas-pa, signifying 'memorial verses on the attainment of omniscience.' The author of this work is named in Tibetan Ñag-hbañs which may be restored in Sanskrit as Vāk-praja. If he is the same as Vāgīśvara-kīrti, he must have lived about 983 A.D. (*vide* Appendix C).

YAMĀRI (ABOUT 1050 A.D.).

172. Yamāri was specially versed in Grammar and Logic. But he was very poor. Once, being unable to support his family and children, he came to Vajrāsana (Buddha-Gayā). There he related his poverty to a Yogin, who replied: "You Paṇḍits despise Yogins and do not solicit dharma from them, hence this has come to pass." Saying this, he uttered the Vasudhara benediction in virtue of which Yamāri rose to opulence. He afterwards received the royal diploma of the university of Vikramaśilā.² He lived during the time of Naya Pāla who died in 1050 A.D. (*vide* Appendix B). He was the author of the following work:—

173. Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭīkā, called in Tibetan Tsha-l-ma-rnam-h-rel-rgyan-gyi-h-rel-bśad, which is an annotation on the Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra of Prajñākara Gupta. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a very voluminous Tibetan translation which covers volumes Be, Me, and Tse of the Tangyur, Mdo. The translation was prepared by Paṇḍita Sumati and the interpreter Blo-

samarthana' has recently been recovered from Nepal by M. M. Hara Prasad Sastri, M.A., of Calcutta, and is deposited in the Library of the Asiatic Society of Bengal. It begins thus:—

इह सत्त्वमर्थक्रियाकारित्वं तदितरलक्षणयोगात् । तच्च क्रमयोगपद्याभ्यां व्याप्तं परस्परव्यवच्छेदलक्षणत्वादनया । प्रकारान्तरेण कर्तव्यमश्वत् । It ends thus:— अन्तर्थाभिप्रेतमयं समाप्तमिति । छतिरिधं रत्नाकरशान्तिपादानाम् ॥

¹ I have consulted the copy belonging to the India Office, London.

² *Vide* Taranatha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 247, 253.

ldan-śeṣ-rab in the monastery of Sñe-thañ near Lhasa. The volume *Be* ends thus :—“ From the immeasurable merit acquired by me by composing this regular annotation, may the world, subduing its adversary death, obtain the indestructible and perfected Nirvāṇa.”¹

S'ĀṆKARĀNANDA (ABOUT (1050 A.D.).

174. S'āṅkarānanda,² called in Tibetan *Bde-byed-dgah-wa*, was born in a Brāhmaṇa family in Kāśmīra. He was learned in all sciences, and was above all an expert in Logic. He intended to write an original work on Logic refuting Dharmakīrti, but in a dream he was told by Mañjūśrī : “ Since Dharmakīrti is an Ārya (a Buddhist monk), one cannot refute him, and if thou seest mistake in him, it is the mistake of thine own understanding.” Thereupon S'āṅkarānanda repented and composed a commentary on Dharmakīrti's *Pramāṇa-vārtika* in seven chapters. He flourished³ during the time of Naya Pāla, who reigned until 1050 A.D. He was the author of the following works on Logic :—

175. *Pramāṇa-vārtika-ṭikā*, called in Tibetan *Tshal-mar-nam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-bśad*, being an annotation on the *Pramāṇa-vārtika* of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation⁴ which covers volumes *Pe* and *Phe* of the *Tangyur*, *Mdo*.

176. *Sambandha-parikṣānusāra*, called in Tibetan *Hbrel-pa-brtag-paḥi-rjeṣ-su-hbrañ-wa*, which is a commentary on the

¹ ཐུལ་བཞིན་རྒྱུ་འདི་ནི་བྱས་པ་ལས།
བསོད་ནམས་ཚད་མེད་བསམས་པ་གང་ཡིན་པ།
དེས་ནི་འཛིན་དེན་གཤེད་ཇི་དགྲ་འཛམས་ནི།
མི་ཟད་རབ་བསྐྱབ་གཉིས་མེད་ཐོབ་པར་ཤོག།

(Tangyur, *Mdo*, Bo, folio 303).

² Vide Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 247, 349; and *Pa-sam-jon-zang*, pp. 107, 120.

³ Some maintain that S'āṅkarānanda was a personal pupil of Dharmakīrti. On this point Lama Taranatha observes :—“ The Brāhmaṇa S'āṅkarānanda appeared at a much later time, and to call him a personal pupil of Dharmakīrti would be a great confusion.”—Taranatha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, p. 188.

⁴ I have consulted this work in the monastery of Labrang, in Sikkim, in 1907.

Sambandha-parīkṣā of Dharmakīrti. The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 24—39. The translation was prepared by the great Indian Paṇḍita Parahita, and the Tibetan interpreter-monk Dgaḥ-waḥi rdo-rje.

The work begins thus :—

“By whom connection with the world has been renounced, in whom there are no “I” and “mine,” who is called free from concerns—to that Omniscient One I bow down.”²

177. Apohasiddhi, called in Tibetan Sel-wa-grub-pa, signifying ‘establishment of a thing by the exclusion of its opposites.’ The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation³ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 308—334. The translation was prepared by the Kāśmīrian Paṇḍita Manoratha and the Tibetan interpreter Blo-lḍan-śes-rab in the incomparable city of Kāśmīra.

The work opens thus :—

“The Omniscient One who is free from all mistakes and who looks to the interests of living beings in all times, saluting him and relying on his mercy, I elucidate the puzzle of ‘self’ and ‘others’ connected with the doctrine of *Apoha*.”⁴

¹ I have consulted the Tibetan version in the possession of India Office, London.

² བཀའ་གིས་འབྲེལ་བ་སྦངས་གྱུར་བ། །
 འགྲོ་བ་བདག་དང་བདག་གི་མི། །
 བཟུང་འཛིན་མེད་པ་ཅན་གསུངས་པ། །
 ཀུན་མཁྱེན་དེ་ལ་ཕྱག་འཚལ་ལོ། །

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 24).

³ I have consulted the India Office copy.

⁴ ཀུན་མཁྱེན་འཁྲུལ་བྱལ་དུས་གསུམ་གནས་པ་ཡི། །
 རོན་རྣམས་ཇི་གཞིན་གཟིགས་པ་ལ་བདུད་དེ། །
 བརྟེ་ལ་གནས་ནས་སེལ་བ་ལ་བདེན་པའི། །
 བདག་གཞན་རབ་དུ་སྦྱ་བའི་འཁྲུལ་བསལ་བྱས། །

(Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, folio 308).

178. **Pratibandha-siddhi**, called in Tibetan Hbrel-pa-grub-pa, signifying “establishment of the causal connection.” The Sanskrit original of this work appears to be lost, but there exists a Tibetan translation ¹ in the Tangyur, Mdo, Ze, Folios 334—335. The translation was prepared by Paṇḍita Bhāgya-rāja and the interpreter Blo-lan-ses-rab

¹ I have consulted the India Office copy.

APPENDIX A.

THE UNIVERSITY OF NĀLANDĀ.

(*About 300—850 A.D.*).

Nālandā was a village which is identified with modern Bara-gaon,¹ 7 miles north of Rajgir, in Behar. Though occasionally mentioned in the Pāli literature, Nālandā was not of great importance before the rise of the Mahāyāna at the beginning of the Christian era. Nāgārjuna, about 300 A.D., and Ārya Deva, about 320 A.D., were the earliest scholars to take interest in the educational institution at that village. A Brāhmaṇa named Suviṣṇu, a contemporary of Nāgārjuna, is said to have established 108 temples there in order that the Abhidharma of the Mahāyāna might not decline.² About 400 A.D., the Chinese pilgrim, Fahian,³ visited this place, which he calls “the village of Nalo.” He saw there a tower which had been erected on the spot where Sāriputra, the right-hand disciple of Buddha, had entered Nirvāṇa. Early in the 7th century A.D., another Chinese pilgrim, the famous Hwen-thsang, visited Nālandā and halted⁴ there 15 months to study the Sanskrit language under Śīlabhadra. According to him⁵ the site of Nālandā was originally a mango garden which was bought by 500 merchants at a cost of ten crores of gold pieces and given to Buddha.⁶ After the Nirvāṇa of Buddha, five kings, named Sakrāditya, Buddha Gupta, Tathāgata Gupta, Bālāditya, and Vajra, built five Saṅghārāma or monasteries at Nālandā. A king of Central India established another magnificent monastery, and began to build round these edifices a high wall with one gate. A long succession of kings continued the work of building, using all the skill of the sculptor, till at the time of Hwen-thsang in 637 A.D. the whole was “truly marvellous to behold.” In the estab-

¹ *Vide* Cunningham's *Ancient Geography of India*, p. 468.

² *Vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus* von Schiefner, pp. 70—86.

³ *Vide* Beal's *Fa-hian*, p. 111

⁴ *Vide* Cunningham's *Ancient Geography of India*, p. x.

⁵ *Vide* Beal's *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, vol. ii, pp. 168—170.

⁶ It must have been given to a Buddhist saint of a later age and not to Buddha himself.

lishment were some thousands of monks, all men of great ability and learning. They were very strict in observing the rules of Vinaya, and were looked up to as models by all India. Learning and discussing they found the day too short, day and night they admonished each other, juniors and seniors mutually helping to perfection. Learned men from different cities came to Nālandā to acquire renown, and some persons even usurped the name of Nālandā students in order that they might be received everywhere with honour. "Of those from abroad who wished to enter the schools of discussion, the majority, beaten by the difficulties of the problems, withdrew; and those who were deeply versed in old and modern learning were admitted, only two or three out of ten succeeding."¹ Hwen-thsang mentions some celebrated men of Nālandā, such as Dharmapāla and Candrapāla, Guṇamati and Sthiramati,² Prabhāmitra and Jinamitra, and Jñānacandra and Śīlabhadra.

Another Chinese pilgrim named I-tsing, who resided in Nālandā for ten years (probably 675—685 A.D.), says that there were eight halls and 300 apartments in the monastery of Nālandā with more than 3,000 resident monks. The lands in its possession contained more than 200 villages which had been bestowed upon the monastery by kings of different generations.³

Nālandā assumed the character of a university from about 450 A.D. Bālāditya, king of Magadha, who built a monastery at Nālandā, was a contemporary of the Hun king Mihirakula, who reigned first in Śākala and afterwards in Kāśmīra. Now Mihirakula⁴ began his reign in 515 A.D., and his contemporary, Bālāditya, must also have lived about that time. There were three predecessors of Bālāditya who built monasteries at Nālandā. Of them, the earliest, named Śakrāditya, must have reigned about 450 A.D. if we suppose 25 years as the average duration of the reign of each of them. The year 450 A.D. is then the earliest limit which we can roughly assign to the royal recognition of Nālandā. The latest limit which we know with certainty is 750 A.D., when Kamalaśīla (*q. v.*) was the professor of Tantras at Nālandā. But as we read in the accounts of Vikramaśīla that there was for some time an intercourse between that university

¹ *Vide* Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. ii, pp. 164—165.

² This Sthiramati seemed to be the one mentioned by I-tsing (*vide* Takakusu, p. 181). He flourished after Asaṅga and Vasubandhu.

³ *Vide* Takakusu's I-tsing, pp. xxxiii. 65 and 154.

⁴ *Vide* Watters' "On Yuan Chwang," vol. i, p. 289.

Takakusu, in his "Paramārtha's Life of Vasubandhu," published in the "Journal" of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, January 1905, maintains that Bālāditya came to the throne in 481 A.D., but this statement is by no means final. The date (462—480 A.D.) of Vikramāditya, Bālāditya's father, is also open to dispute.

and Nālandā, we may suppose that the latter continued to exist approximately until 850 A.D.

According to Tibetan accounts¹ the quarter in which the Nālandā University, with its grand library, was located, was called Dharmagañja (Piety Mart). It consisted of three grand buildings called Ratnasāgara, Ratnodadhi, and Ratnarañjaka, respectively. In Ratnodadhi, which was nine-storeyed, there were the sacred scripts called Prajñāpāramitā-sūtra, and Tāntrik works such as Samāja-guhya, etc. After the Turuška raiders had made incursions in Nālandā, the temples and *Cāityas* there were repaired by a sage named Mudita Bhadra. Soon after this, Kukutasiddha, minister of the king of Magadha, erected a temple at Nālandā, and while a religious sermon was being delivered there, two very indigent Tīrthika mendicants appeared. Some naughty young novice-monks in disdain threw washing-water on them. This made them very angry. After propitiating the sun for 12 years, they performed a *yajña*, fire-sacrifice and threw living embers and ashes from the sacrificial pit into the Buddhist temples, etc. This produced a great conflagration which consumed Ratnodadhi. It is, however, said that many of the Buddhist scriptures were saved by water which leaked through the sacred volumes of Prajñāpāramitā-sūtra and Tantra.

¹ *Vide* Pag-sam jon-zang, edited in the original Tibetan by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bahadur, C.I.E., at Calcutta, p. 92.

APPENDIX B.

A LIST OF KINGS OF THE PĀLA DYNASTY OF BENGAL AND BEHAR.

(*From Tibetan sources*).

In the Tibetan books,¹ such as Pag-sam-jon-zang, Lama Taranatha's Chos-byun, etc., we find a short account of the kings of the Pāla dynasty of Bengal. Go Pāla, the founder of the dynasty, lived principally in Puṇḍra-*vardhana*. His successor, Deva Pāla, annexed Varendra to his kingdom. Deva Pāla's grandson, Dharma Pāla, conquered Magadha and annexed it to Bengal. Dharma Pāla's power is said to have extended in the east to the ocean, in the west to Delhi, in the north to Jālandhara, and in the south to the Vindhya ranges. It is stated that during his reign Sānta Rakṣita died. Now Sānta Rakṣita visited Tibet during the reign of Thi-srong-deu-tsan in 749 A.D., and worked there for 13 years, that is, till 762 A.D. His death must therefore have taken place after 762 A.D. Dīpaṅkara Srijñāna, *alias* Atiśa, High-priest of Vikramaśīlā, who was a contemporary of king Naya Pāla of Magadha, visited Tibet in company with Nag-tsho-lotsava in 1040 A.D. during the reign of Lhasun-byañ-chub, son of Lha-lama-ye-śes-hoḍ, who held his court at Tholing in Nāri. These facts throw a good deal of light on the dates of the Pāla kings.² It is further stated that the death of Mahī Pāla is exactly synchronous with that of the Tibetan king Khri-ral. Now Khri-ral (or Ral-pa-can) died in 899 A.D.³ This fixes the date of the death of Mahī Pāla. As the period of reign of each of the kings that preceded and succeeded Mahī Pāla is definitely stated by Lama Tārānātha, and also by the author of the Pag-sam-jon-zang, there is no difficulty in ascertaining the dates of the Pāla kings. Proceeding in this way, we can fix the dates as follows :—

1. Go Pāla	..	..	660—705 A.D.
2. Deva Pāla	..	..	705—753 A.D.

¹ *Vide* Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 202—252; and Pag-sam-jon-zang, edited by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, Bhabur, C.I.E., pp. 112—121.

² *Vide* the 16th volume of *Klon-rdol-gsun-ḥbum*, and Sarat Chandra Das's "Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow," pp. 50—76.

³ *Vide* the Chronological Table extracted from the *Vaiduryakarpo* in Csoma de Koros's *Tibetan Grammar*, p. 183.

3.	Rasa Pāla	..	..	753—765	A.D.
4.	Dharma Pāla	..	..	765—829	A.D.
5.	Masu Rakṣita	..	..	829—837	A.D.
6.	Vana Pāla	..	..	837—847	A.D.
7.	Mahī Pāla	..	..	847—899	A.D.
8.	Mahā Pāla	..	..	899—940	A.D.
9.	Sāmu Pāla ¹	..	..	940—952	A.D.
10.	Sreṣṭha Pāla or Praiṣṭha Pāla	..	..	952—955	A.D.
11.	Canaka	..	..	955—983	A.D.
12.	Bhaya Pāla	.	..	983—1015	A.D.
13.	Naya Pāla	..	..	1015—1050	A.D.
14.	Amra Pāla	..	..	1050—1063	A.D.
15.	Hasti Pāla	..	..	1063—1078	A.D.
16.	Kṣānti Pāla	..	..	1078—1092	A.D.
17.	Rāma Pāla	..	..	1092—1138	A.D.
18.	Yakṣa Pāla	..	..	1138—1139	A.D.

The researches on the Pāla kings, by the late Dr. Rājendra Lāl Mitra, arrived at a conclusion which is somewhat different from mine. Dr. Mitra's list of Pāla kings² is given below :—

1.	Go Pāla	..	..	855—875	A.D.
2.	Dharma Pāla	..	..	875—895	A.D.
3.	Deva Pāla	..	..	895—915	A.D.
4.	Vigraha Pāla I	..	..	915—935	A.D.
5.	Nārāyaṇa Pāla	..	..	935—955	A.D.
6.	Rāja Pāla	..	..	955—975	A.D.
7.	.... Pāla	..	..	975—995	A.D.
8.	Vigraha Pāla II	..	..	995—1015	A.D.
9.	Mahī Pāla	..	..	1015—1040	A.D.
10.	Naya Pāla	..	..	1040—1060	A.D.
11.	Vigraha Pāla III	..	..	1060—1080	A.D.

¹ Probably the same as Nārāyaṇa Pāla who, in the Bhagalpur plate, is styled "the lord of Aṅga."

² Vide Dr. Rājendra Lāl Mitra's "Indo-Aryans," vol. ii, p. 232.

APPENDIX C.

THE ROYAL UNIVERSITY OF VIKRAMASILĀ.

(About 800—1200 A.D.).

Vikramasīlā,¹ mentioned in Sanskrit Sragdharāstotra-ṭikā,² Vṛhat-svayambhū-purāṇa,³ Tibetan Tangyur,⁴ etc., was a great collegiate monastery, or rather University, founded by king Dharma Pāla at the close of the 8th century A.D. It was situated on a precipitous hill⁵ in Behar at the right bank of the Ganges, possibly at Sila-saṃgama, now called Pātharghātā, near Colgong in the Bhagalpur district. Dharmapāla endowed

¹ Vide Tārānātha's Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner, pp. 234-242, 259-261; Pag-sam-jon-zang, pp. 113, 117, 118; and Sarat Chandra Das's article in the "Journal" of the Buddhist Text Society of Calcutta, vol. i, part i, pp. 10-12; and his "Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow," pp. 50-76.

² The colophon of the Sragdharā-stotra-ṭikā runs as follows:—

श्रीमद्विक्रमशैलदेवमहाविहारस्य राजगृहपण्डितभिक्षु श्रीजिनरत्नित्तना बालार्क-
स्तुतिटोका परिसमाप्ता (Sragdharā-stotra, edited in the Bibliotheca Indica series by Satis Chandra Vidyabhusana, p. 50).

³ वाराणस्यां नगर्यां च विहारे यच्च स्थान्तिके ।

तदा विक्रमशैलसि विहारे वसदुत्तमः ॥

धर्मश्रीमित्रो नामोऽयं भिक्षु पण्डितकक्षुका ।

धर्मदिदेश्यमास नामसङ्कीर्ति च कथाश्च ॥ (Vṛhat-svayambhū-

purāṇa, edited by M. M. Hara Prasad Sastri, chap. vi, pp. 320-321).

⁴ Numerous Sanskrit works such as तारैकविंशतिकाङ्गसूत्रे संचेप, तारा-चिरम-
स्तोत्रम् etc., were translated into Tibetan in the monastery of Vikrama-
sīlā, as is evident from the Tangyur, Rgyud, La, Folios 11-26, 54, etc.

⁵ At the distance of a day's sail below Sultanganj there is a steep hill called Pātharghātā overhanging the Ganges, which here is *uttaravāhīni* (or flows towards the north). This corresponds exactly with the account of Vikramasīlā given in Tibetan books. There are also ruins of Buddhistic images at Pātharghātā. For its old name Silasaṃgama vide Francklin's "Site of Ancient Palibothra," pp. 54-55, Appendix p. xiii. General Cunningham identifies Vikramasīlā with modern Silao, which is a small village three miles to the south of Bargaon (ancient Nālandā) and six miles to the north of Rajgir in the subdivision of Behar (vide Report of the Archaeological Survey, vol. viii, p. 83). But this identification does not tally with the description found in Tibetan books, for the Ganges never passed by Silao, nor is there any hill near to it.

the university with rich grants sufficing for the maintenance of 108 resident monks besides numerous non-resident monks and pilgrims. At the head of the university was always a most learned and pious sage. Thus at the time of Dharma Pāla, Ācārya Buddha-jñāna-pāda directed the affairs of the university, and during 1034—1038 A.D. Dīpaṅkara or Śrījñāna Atiśa was at its head, and Sthavira Ratnākara was the superior of the monastery. The famous Tibetan scholar Nag-tshul-khrimrgyal-wa, better known as Nag-tsho Lotsava, who came to take Dīpaṅkara Śrījñāna *alias* Atiśa to Tibet, resided in the monastery of Vikramaśilā for three years, 1035—1038 A.D.¹ Kamalakulīśa, Narendra-śrījñāna, Dāna Rakṣita, Abhayakara Gupta, Subhakara Gupta, Sunāyakaśrī, Dharmākara Śānti and Śākyaśrī Paṇḍita also belonged to the university of Vikramaśilā. Provision was made specially for the study of grammar, metaphysics (including logic) and ritualistic books. On the walls of the university were painted images of paṇḍitas eminent for their learning and character. The distinguished scholars of the university received a diploma of "Paṇḍita" from the kings themselves. For instance, the distinguished logicians, Ācārya Jetāri of Vārendra and Ratnavajra of Kāśmīra, were granted such a diploma. The most erudite sages were appointed to guard the gates of the university. These were six in number, each of which had to be guarded by scholars designated "Gate-keepers" (called in Tibetan Go-sruñ, corresponding, perhaps, to our Dvāra-paṇḍita). During the reign of Canaka (955—983 A.D.) the undermentioned eminent logicians acted as gate-keepers :—

- | | | |
|---------------------------------|----|-----------------------------|
| (i)—At the eastern gate | .. | Ācārya Ratnākara Śānti. |
| (ii)—At the western gate | .. | Vāgīśvarakīrti, of Benares. |
| (iii)—At the northern gate | .. | The famous Naropa. |
| (iv)—At the southern gate | .. | Prajñākaramati. |
| (v)—At the first central gate | .. | Ratnavajra of Kāśmīra. |
| (vi)—At the second central gate | .. | Jñāna-śrī-mitra of Gauḍa. |

The university of Vikramaśilā is said to have been destroyed by the Mahomedan invader Bakhtiar Khilji² about 1203 A.D. when Śākya-śrī-paṇḍita, of Kāśmīra, was at its head.

¹ Vide *Klon-rdol-gsuñ-hbum*, vol. xvi.

² Vide the Tibetan-English Dictionary compiled by Rai Sarat Chandra Das, p. 869; Waddell's "Lamaism," p. 16.

The Turuṣkas or Mahomedans attacked Magadha several times. Thus Tārānātha, speaking of Ācārya Kamala Rakṣita who was at the head of the Vikramaśilā university at the end of the 10th century A.D., observes :— "A minister of the Turuska king, out of the Karna land in the west, together with 500 Turuṣkas, drew to Magadha to plunder. They plundered

the sacrificial materials, but when they began to walk all in a body to the Ācārya (Kamala Rakṣita) the Ācārya got into a rage and walked up along, throwing a jug, filled with water, over which he had spoken the mantras. On the spot a great and indomitable storm collected, out of the wind came forth many black men armed with swords who fell upon the Turuskas; the minister himself perished spitting blood, and various contagious illnesses repulsed the others in such a way that none of them could reach their native country, and a great terror came over the Tirthas and Turuskas.—Tārānātha's *Geschichte des Buddhismus von Schiefner*, pp. 266, 261.

GENERAL INDEX.

A	Page	Page
Abbot	125	Ācārya 78, 80, 83, 102, 103, 121, 131, 136, 139, 151, 152
Ābhāsa	28, 40, 42	Ācārya Bodhisattva .. 125
Abhāva	10, 24, 42	Ācārya Śānti .. 140
Abhayadeva ..	36, 37	Act 29
Abhayagirivāsini ..	65	Action 8, 32, 95
Abhayakara Gupta ..	151	Act-fruit 44
Abhayatilakopādhyāya ..	53	Ādinātha 34
Abhidhammapiṭaka 58, 59, 60, 63, 64		Ādipurāṇa .. 14, 24, 28, 34
Abhidhammatthasaṃgaha ..	59	Adrikalpa 81
Abhidhānacintāmaṇi ..	45	Advaita 23, 27
Abhidharma	121, 145	Advaitavāda 23
Abhidharma-jñāna-prasthāna- śāstra	64, 66	Affirmation 30
Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā ..	64	Affirmative 30, 31, 32
Abhidharma-mahāvibhāṣā- śāstra	63, 66	Āgama .. 3, 4, 10, 13, 29, 32, 40
Abhidharma-vibhāṣā	63	Āgamābhāsa 33
Abhinibodha	4	Ahmedabad 44
Abhrānta	109	Ain-i-Akbari 40, 41
Absence of connection ..	97	Ajātaśatru 58
Absence of disconnection ..	93	Ajiva 8
Absence of inverse disconnec- tion	98	Akalaṅka 25, 26, 27, 28, 33, 37, 40
Absolute	42	Akalaṅkadeva 25, 54
Absolute knowledge .. 2, 15		Akalaṅkacandra 25
Absolutely	109	Akalaṅkastotra 26
Absolute non-existence .. 24, 25		Ākāśa 74
Absolute reality	68	Akbar 55
Acandra	112	Akevalajñāna 4
Ācāra	71, 80	Akṣa Candra 69
Ācāra-dinakara	3	Akṣapāda xvii, 11, 46, 51, 53
Ācārāṅga-sūtra	6	Akṣapāda Gautama .. xvii
Ācāra's monastery	80	Ālambaṇa 121
		Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā 101, 120
		Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-tīkā 120, 121
		Ālambaṇa-parīkṣā-vṛtti .. 101

	Page		Page
Ālambana-pratyaya-dhyāna- śāstra	101	Aniścita	93
Ālambana-pratyaya-dhyāna- śāstra-vyākhyā ..	102	Antar	42
Ālaya-vijñāna	71	Antar-vyāpti .. 18, 42, 76, 140	
Alberuni	14	Antarvyāpti-samarthana ..	141
Āloka	xviii	Antecedent	42
Āloka-darpana	xviii	Antecedent non-existence ..	24, 25
Āloka-kaṇṭakoddhāra ..	xviii	Antiquary, Indian .. 3, 4, 5, 6, 9, 13, 14, 38, 39, 45, 49, 53, 123	
Āloka-rahasya	xviii	Antiquities	68
Āloka-sāra-mañjarī ..	xviii	Anumāna .. 4, 5, 10, 15, 16, 29, 40, 41, 49, 54, 74, 99, 109	
All-pervading	112	Anumānābhāsa	99
Alwis, Dr.	58	Anupalabdhi .. 30, 42, 110, 111, 117, 134	
Amaracandra	47, 48	Anuṣṭubh	84
Amarasvāmi-carita	49	Anuyoga-dvāra-sūtra ..	4
Amarāvati	68	Anvayi	31
Ambiguous	95, 113	Ānvīkṣikī	xvii
Ambrosia	122	Anyāpoha	24
Amdo	137	Anyāpoha-vicāra-kārikā ..	130
Āmra Pāla	149	Anyonyābhāva	24
Anadhyavasāya	40	Aparāntaka	69
Anahillapurapattana ..	38, 53	Aparaśaila	65
Anaikāntika	19, 113	Aparaseliya	58
Analysis	100	Apoha	143
Analysis of wheel	100	Apoha-nāma-prakaraṇa ..	132
Analogy	74, 75	Apohasiddhi	140, 143
Ānanda Sūri	47, 48	Apparent	95
Ananta-śrī	138	Appendix .. 145, 148, 150	
Anantavīrya	28, 37, 38	Application .. 16, 31, 32, 42	
Ananvaya	19, 97, 116	Application of reason ..	61
Ancient	xvii	Apprehend	95
Ancient school	xvii	Apprehension	10
Andhra .. 68, 78, 81, 82		Apradarśitānvaya	20, 116
Anecdota Oxoniensia ..	75	Apradarśitavyatireka ..	21
Anekānta-Jaina-mata- vyavasthā	54	Āpta-mīmāṃsā .. 23, 24, 25, 26, 27	
Anekārthasaṃgraha	45	Āpta-mīmāṃsāśālikṛti ..	26
Aṅga "	3, 149	Āpta-mīmāṃsāśālikṛti-ṭikā ..	23
Aṅguttara Nikāya	59	Āpta-mīmāṃsā-vivaraṇa ..	54
Anhilwad	35	Āpta-parikṣā	27
Anhilwad Patan	35	Arāsana	39

	Page		Page
Arcatā ..	46, 50, 53, 133, 134	Aṣṭasāhasrī-vṛtti ..	55
Arcatā-tarka-ṭikā ..	53	Aṣṭaśati ..	25, 27
Archaic ..	xxi	Asti ..	24
Ardha-Māgadhi ..	3	Astronomy ..	62, 121
Argument ..	44	Aśvaghoṣa ..	67
Argumentation 29, 40, 41, 54, 60, 73		Aśvavabodhatīrtha ..	50
Arhat ..	7, 41, 49	Atiśa ..	138, 148, 151
Arithmetic ..	62	Ātmaka ..	116
Aristotle ..	96	Ātman ..	40, 43, 127, 128
Art ..	62, 103	Atom ..	96, 98, 115
Art of healing ..	103	Attribute ..	74
Arthāpatti ..	10	Attributeless ..	95
Ārya ..	65, 83, 122, 142	Atyantābhāva ..	24, 42
Ārya Asaṅga ..	73, 74	Auditory ..	10, 59
Ārya Deva ..	67, 70, 72, 145	Aulūkyā ..	51
Ārya-kośa ..	124	Authority ..	4, 10
Ārya Mahāśāṃghika ..	65	Avadānakalpalatā ..	15
Ārya Nāgārjuna ..	68	Avadhi ..	4, 10, 41
Ārya Sammitīya ..	65, 66	Avadhi-jñāna ..	41
Ārya Sarvāstivāda ..	65	Avagraha ..	40
Ārya Sthavira ..	65, 67	Avalokiteśvara ..	121, 122
Ārya-Tārā-antarbali-vidhi ..	121	Āvantika ..	65
Asādhāraṇa ..	94	Avasarpinī ..	1
Asaṅga xix, 73, 74, 78, 95, 96,	122, 146	Āvaśyakaniryukti ..	2
Āśāṅkā ..	7	Āvaśyaka-sūtra ..	6
Āśāṅkā-pratisedha ..	7	Avāya ..	41
Ascetic ..	15	Avayava ..	42
Asiatic Society xiii, 9, 23, 40, 52,	72, 125, 141	Avidyā ..	59
Asiddha ..	18, 93, 112	Avinābhāva ..	29
Asoka ..	58, 61, 121	Avyātireki ..	21
Aspect ..	92	Ayodhyā ..	xix, 67, 73, 74, 75
Āśrava ..	8		
Assertion ..	44		
Aṣṭasāhasrī ..	23, 26, 27, 37, 54		
Aṣṭasāhasrikā ..	105		
Aṣṭasāhasrikā Prajñāpāra-			
mitā ..	64		
Aṣṭasāhasrī-viśamapada-tāt-			
parya-ṭikā ..	26, 37		

B

Bactria ..	61
Bahir ..	42
Bahir-vyāpti ..	18, 42
Bahurūtiya ..	65
Bāhulika ..	58
Bakhtiar Khiliji ..	151
Bālāditya ..	xix, 145, 146
Bālāvatāra-tarka ..	137

	Page		Page
Bāṇa ..	34	Bharṣa ..	123, 124
Bandha ..	8	Bhartṛhari 26, 27, 28, 34, 102,	105, 119
Baragaon 145, 150		Bhā-sarvajña ..	53
Barisal ..	122	Bhāsvāmin ..	22
Baroda ..	55	Bhāṣya ..	8, 10, 12, 122
Basket ..	58	Bhaṭṭa ..	34, 81
Bauddha ..	46, 49, 54	Bhāṭṭa ..	54
Bauddhadarśana 49, 66, 67, 68,		Bhāṭṭapāda ..	51
82, 105, 107, 133, 138		Bhaṭṭāraka ..	54
Bdag ..	127, 128	Bhāva ..	11, 24
Bdag-gi-don-gyi-rjes-su-dpag-		Bhavanagara ..	13, 46
pa ..	109	Bhavananda ..	xviii
Bde-byed-dgaḥ-wa ..	142	Bhavanandivyākhyā ..	xviii
Beal, Rev. xix, 14, 62, 63, 66, 67,		Bhaya Pāla ..	149
68, 69, 71, 72, 74, 75, 80, 82, 145		Bhikṣu ..	61, 69, 99
Beḍā vṛtti ..	102	Bhikṣu-sūtra ..	61
Behar xx, 57, 103, 145, 148, 150		Bhim Sing ..	8
Belief ..	91	Bhoja Deva ..	68
Benares xiii, xiv, 6, 8, 39, 50, 51,		Bhoraśilā ..	80
52, 55, 133, 151		Bhota ..	50
Benediction ..	141	Bhrama-pramathana-yukti-	
Bengal xiii, xv, xx, 102, 117, 121,		hetu-siddhi ..	71
122, 124, 131, 134, 135, 141, 148		Bhrānta ..	81
Berar ..	68	Bhrānti ..	81
Berlin ..	3, 37	Bhūmi ..	71
Bhadrabāhu ..	5, 6, 8	Bibliotheca Indica xx, 9, 14, 23,	
Bhadrabāhucarita ..	2	65, 70, 109, 113, 114, 124, 131,	
Bhadra Pālita ..	80	140, 150	
Bhadreśvara ..	50	Bibliothek zu Berlin ..	37
Bhagalpur ..	149, 150	Bimba ..	39
Bhagavān ..	137	Biṣ-wa-ljug-paḥi-rtog-ge ..	137
Bhagavān Upavaṣa ..	33	Bliss ..	21
Bhagavati-sūtra ..	4	blo-dan-śeṣ-rab 108, 131, 132,	
Bhāgyarāja ..	132, 135, 141	135, 142, 143, 144	
Bhāmati ..	23, 105	Blunders ..	81
Bhāmati-ṭikā ..	23	Bodhisattva 65, 82, 83, 99,	
Bhāmśa Candra ..	69	101, 124	
Bhandarkar, Dr. R. G. 2, 5, 6, 14,		Bodhisattva-caryā-nirdeśa 72, 73	
24, 25, 26, 37, 38, 41, 45, 47,		Bombay xiii, 6, 8, 13, 34, 46,	
53, 63, 68		54, 95	
Bharaṇi ..	30		

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Cāndri-patrikā	xviii	Choṣ-can	90
Candrodāya	33	Choṣ-dan-choṣ-can-gtan-la-dwab- pa	136
Canon	3, 64	Choṣ-grags	103
Canonical	3, 63	Choṣ-kyi-brtson-hgru ₂	138
Canonical scriptures	3	Choṣ-mchog	131
Canonised	58	Choṣ-mi-mthun-dpe-ltar-snañ wa	97
Cap	78, 79	Choṣ-mi-mthun-pa	90
Capital	49	Choṣ-mthun	96
Carpenter, J. E.	60	Choṣ-mthun-dpe-ltar-snañ-wa	96
Cārvāka	43, 46, 51	Choṣ-mthun-pa	90
Caste	102, 103	Chowkhamba	50, 51, 52
Casuist	62	Christian	145
Casuistry	59, 60	Citrakūṭa	50
Catalogue	36	Class	65, 109
Catalogue of the Chinese Tri- piṭaka	66	Classification	59
Categories	8	Coḍa	103
Caturviṃśati-Jina-stuti	23	Co-existent	129
Caturviṃśati prabandha	6, 48, 51	Co-existent cause	129
Causation	62	Cogitation	40
Cause 11, 29, 30, 31, 111, 117, 129, 138		Coḷa	71
Cemetery	104	Colgong	150
Cetiya	58	Collective	11
Ceylon	57, 58, 63, 122, 140	Commentary	xvii, xix, 66
Chala	51, 61	Comparison	4, 10, 74, 85, 88
Chalukya	xx, 81	Compendium	49, 82, 83
Chanda	140	Concentration	10
Chandonuśāsana-vṛtti	45	Conception	112
Chando-ratnākara	140	Concern	143
Chaplain	49	Conclusion 8, 16, 31, 32, 42, 92 94	
Characteristics 40, 41, 91, 92, 93, 99, 100, 109, 110, 112, 134		Conditional	68
Characteristics of the middle term	91	Confusion	109
China xiv, 63, 71, 73, 74, 75, 76, 89, 101		Conjeeveram	80, 102
Chittore	50	Connection 42, 55, 87, 92, 96, 97, 111, 116, 118, 144	
Chola	103	Connection unshown	20, 116
Choṣ	90	Consciousness	40, 43, 59
Choṣ-byuñ	148	Consequence	40
		Constituent	44

	<i>Page</i>	D	<i>Page</i>
Contained	29	Dabhoi	55
Container	29, 111	Daḍ-paḥi-śeṣ-rab	84
Contemplation	80	Daḍ-pa-śeṣ-rab	100
Contemplative	109	Dakṣiṇa	81
Contemplative system	71	Dāna Rakṣita	151
Continuity	118, 129	Dānaśīla	134, 135
Contradiction 94, 95, 113, 114		Dāna-śrīla	134
Contradictory	18, 94, 95, 112, 113	Darjeeling	xv, xv
Contradistinction	62	Dar-ma-grag	117
Contrariety	17	Darśanaśuddhi	46
Contrary separation	21	Daśabhūmīśvara	64
Controversialist	85	Daśāśruta-skandha-sūtra	6
Controversy	79	Daśavaikālika-niryukti	5, 6
Conventional	12	Daśavaikālika-niryukti-ṭīkā	48
Conviction	111	Daśavaikālika-sūtra	5
Conveyancing	62	Daśavaikālika-ṭīkā	46
Cordier, Dr. Palmyr	70	Daśavaikālika-vṛtti	3
Coroa	63	Daśāvayava-vākya	6
Cosmic blindness	59	Das, Sarat Chandra	xv, 63, 72, 78, 82, 84, 119, 121, 124, 126, 129, 147, 148, 150, 151
Council 13, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64, 67		Death	57
Council of discussion	44	Debate	44, 62, 74, 104
Counter-argument	44	Debater	107
Counter-assertion	44	Debator	74
Counterpart	29	Deccan xiii, xix, 26, 68, 103, 107	
Counter proposition	7	Deccan College	28, 34
Cowell, Mr E. B. 8, 26, 66, 67, 68		Declaration	111
Crawford, Mr.	xv	Defeat	61, 74
Credible	88, 89	Defect	21
Credible word	85, 88, 89	Defective	41
Cremation	104	Defective knowledge	4
Crest-gem of logicians	26	Definite	40
Csoma de Koros 105, 124, 135, 148		Definition	129
Cūḍāmaṇi	26, 103	Degree	1
Culla Vagga	57	De-kho-na-ñid-ḥḍuṣ-paḥi-ḍkal-ḥgrel	130
Cunningham, General 145, 150		De-kho-na-ñid-ḥḍuṣ-paḥi-tshig-leḥur-byas-pa	125
Cūrṇika	3	Delhi	63, 148
Cycle	57		

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Demonstration	89	Dharmakīrti	xvii, xix, 24, 26, 27, 34, 41, 48, 49, 53, 82, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 124, 125, 129, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 138, 139, 140, 143
Derivation	12	Dharmāloka	131
Deva	67, 70, 71, 72	Dharmapāla	102, 103, 105, 124, 130, 146, 148, 149, 150, 151
Devacandra	44	Dharmapāla, A. H.	61
Devadatta	29, 32	Dharmaputra	48
Devāgamastotra	23	Dharmasāgaragaṇi	5
Deva Pāla	148, 149	Dharmasamgraha	71
Devardhi Gaṇi	13, 22	Dharmāsoka	99
Devasundara	53	Dharmavijaya, Muni	xiv, 2, 6, 13, 22, 46, 49, 50, 52, 54
Deva Sūri	38, 39, 50	Dharmaviniscaya	140
Devendra Bhadra	130	Dharmin	29, 90
Devendrabodhi	xvii, 118, 119	Dharmottara	xix, 35, 46, 50, 53, 67, 131, 133
Devotee	103, 122, 123, 135, 136, 139	Dharmottarācārya	xx, 130, 131, 133
Dgaḥ-waḥi-rdo-rje	143	Dharmottaratippanaka	34, 131
Dge-bseruṅ	130	Dialectic	106
Dge-ṣes-sin-gyan	100	Dialectician	72, 80, 100, 107, 123, 129
Dge-waḥi-blo-gros	106, 117, 118, 119	Dialectics	83
Dgra-laṣ-rgyal-wa	136	Dialogue of Buddha	60
Dhammaguttika	58	Didhiti	xviii
Dhammasaṅgani	59	Didhiti-sāra-mañjarī	xviii
Dhammuttariya	67	Didhiti-ṭīkā	xviii
Dhanapat Sing	3, 4, 6, 8, 11	Didhiti-tippanī	xviii
Dhandhuka	44	Didhiti-vyākhyā-vivecana	xviii
Dhaneśvara	37	Digambara	xviii, 1, 2, 5, 9, 22, 25, 26, 28, 33, 36, 37, 38, 54, 82, 105, 127
Dhānyakāṭaka	xx	Digha Nikāya	59, 60
Dhāraṇā	41	Dignāga	xvi, xix, 27, 34, 49, 52, 53, 54, 70, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 92, 95, 96, 99, 100,
Dhāraṇī	103		
Dharma	29, 80, 90, 104, 141		
Dharmabhūṣaṇa	54, 82		
Dharmābhhyudaya-mahākāv- ya	47, 48		
Dharma-dharmi-viniścaya	136		
Dharmagaṇja	147		
Dharmaghoṣa	46		
Dharma-guptya	65		
Dharmākara Datta	131		
Dharmākara Śānti	151		

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Entrance to the Science of		Fallacy of absence of connec-	
Logic	100	tion	97
Equanimity	21	Fallacy of absence of discon-	
Era	63	nection	98
Era of tradition	1	Fallacy of argumentation ..	32
Erring one	81	Fallacy of "collective" ..	43
Error	62	Fallacy of example 19, 33, 98	
Ether	21, 74, 93	Fallacy of excluded middle	
Etymological	12	and major terms ..	97
Europe	xxi	Fallacy of heterogeneous ex-	
Evamblhūta	4, 12, 21	ample	20, 21, 97
Evamblhūtābhāsa	43	Fallacy of homogeneous ex-	
Evolution	129	ample	19, 96
Examination	129	Fallacy of included major	
Example 7, 16, 17, 18, 31, 32,		term	98
42, 74, 76, 90, 95, 96, 97, 98,		Fallacy of included middle	
114, 115, 116		and major terms ..	98
Excluded	96	Fallacy of included middle	
Excluded major	96	term	98
Excluded middle	96	Fallacy of inference	99
Excluded middle and major		Fallacy of inverted negation	98
terms	97	Fallacy of middle term 18, 33, 93,	
Existence	20, 24, 25,	98, 112	
43, 68		Fallacy of minor term	17, 32
Experience	99, 109	Fallacy of naya	43
Extent	92	Fallacy of perception	32, 99
External	42	Fallacy of "practical" ..	43
External inseparable connec-		Fallacy of reason	33
tion	42	Fallacy of reasoning	98
Extreme	68	Fallacy of recognition	32
Extrinsic	18	Fallacy of recollection	32
Eye	15, 59, 87, 95	Fallacy of refutation	98, 116
F		Fallacy of "subtle"	43
Fact	74	Fallacy of "suchlike"	43
Factitious	30, 31, 32	Fallacy of straight expres-	
Fahian	62, 67, 69, 145	sion	43
Fallacious	90, 96, 112	Fallacy of thesis	90, 98, 112
Fallacy 21, 28, 32, 41, 42, 43, 70,		Fallacy of verbal testimony	33
89, 93, 94, 96, 98, 99, 112,		Familiar	95
113, 114, 115, 116		Feeling	91
		Fine Art	103, 121

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
First Council	58	Gokulika	58
Fitness	32	Go Pāla	124, 148, 149
Fleet, Dr. J. F. ..	57, 63	Gorakhpura	57
Form	110	Gorbara	3
Form of a syllogism ..	90	Go-sruṇ	151
Formula	6	Gosvāmi, Dāmodara Lal ..	51
Francklin	150	Gotama	2
Fraud	61	Gotamastotra	3
Futility	116	Gotra	5
G			
Gacchotpatti-prakīrṇaka ..	48	Gough, Mr.	8, 26, 66, 67, 68
Gadādhara	xviii	Govi Candra	119
Gaṇadhara	2	Govind	26
Gaṇadhara-sārdha-śataka ..	3	Grags-ḥbyor-śes-rab ..	130, 133
Gaṇḍavyūha	64	Grags-pa-rgyal-mtshan-dpal- bzah	89
Gandha-hasti-mahābhāṣya ..	23	Grammar	103, 121, 122, 140, 141, 151
Gāndhāra	xix, 74, 75	Great Britain	57, 58, 63, 64, 66, 72, 76
Ganges	121, 122, 150	Great Vehicle	63
Gaṅgeśa Upādhyāya xvii, xviii,	48	ḡlegs-barn-ḡkḡlag-paḡi-thab ..	134
Garbhapāda	136	ḡser-gyi-go-cha	84, 100
Gate-keeper	138, 139, 140, 151	ḡshan-gyi-don-gyi-rje-dpag ..	85
Gāthāsāhasrī	48	ḡshan-gyi-don-gyi-tshig ..	106
Gauḍa	137, 138, 151	ḡshan-gyi-don-rjes-su-dpag-pa ..	109
Gautama	xvii, 2, 3, 11, 57	ḡshan-la-ḡrtag-paḡi-tshig-leḡur byas-pa	130
Gems	6, 14, 15	ḡshan-sel-wa	132
Genealogy	8	ḡtan-tshigs	85, 90, 91
General	11, 17, 32, 86, 93, 94, 113, 115	ḡtan-tshigs-kyi-de-kho-na-nid- ḡstan-pa	136
Generality	82, 95, 121, 128	ḡtan-tshigs-kyi-ḡkhor-lo-gtan- la-ḡwab-pa	99
General knowledge	109	ḡtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa ..	117
General property	11	ḡtan-tshigs-kyi-thigs-pa-rgya- cher-ḡgrel-wa	120
Generic property	11, 43	ḡtan-tshigs-ltar-ḡnan ..	93
Genus	85, 86, 99	ḡtan-tshigs-thigs-paḡi-ḡgrel- wa	133
Genyo	75	Guge	125
Germany	122	Guṇa	128
Ghānaviññāṇa	59		
Ghaṭa	12		
Gloss	xix, 131		
ḡnas-maḡi-buḡ	128		
God	128, 131		

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Guṇākara-śrī-bhadrā ..	125	Hema	35
Guṇamati	146	Hemacandra 2, 26, 35, 44, 45, 51,	123
Guṇaratna 48, 52, 53, 133			
Guṇava	3	Heina Varma or Kanaka	
Gupta	49, 130	Varma	84, 100
Gupta era	70	Heresy	77
Gupta samvat	49	Heretic	61, 102
Guru	129	Heretical	58, 65
Gurvāvali	6, 39, 53	Heterodox	103
Gurvāvali-sūtra	5	Heterogeneous 17, 19, 20, 31, 32,	
Gustatory	59	90, 91, 94, 96, 98, 110, 112,	
Guzerat	xviii, 38, 44, 45,	115, 116, 117	
	46, 47	Heterogeneous example 20, 21,	
Gyantse	xv	97, 98	
H			
Haimavata	65	Hetu 4, 5, 7, 11, 16, 17, 19, 29,	
Haṃsa	48, 50	30, 33, 41, 42, 62, 74, 76,	
Haṃsarāja, Hira Lal ..	51	77, 85, 90, 91, 117	
Han	64	Hetubindu 53, 120, 133	
Handschriften-verzeichnisse	3	Hetubinduṭikā	120
Hanoi	70	Hetubinduvivaraṇa 117, 133	
Hardy, Rev.	57	Hetu-cakra-hamaru	99
Haribhadra 3, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 139		Hetu-dvāra-sāstra	99
Harivaṃśa Purāṇa	2	Hetu-prayoga	42
Harṣa	xx, 123	Hetu-tattva-upadeśa	136
Harṣa Deva	132	Hetu-vibhakti	7
Harṣa Vardhana	123	Hetuvidyā	xvii, 65, 82
Hasti Pāla	149	Hetuvidyā-sāstra	82, 83
l|braṣ-bu	110, 134	Hetvābhāsa 18, 33, 93, 112	
l|braṣ-buḥi-gtan-tshig ..	117	l|gal-wa	94
l|brel-pa-bṛtag-paḥi-rgya-cher-		l|gro-wa-raṅ-bshin-du-smra-	
bśad-pa	123	wa-bṛtag-pa	127
l|brel-pa-bṛtag-paḥi-rjes-su		l|gyur-war-smra-wa	129
l|braṅ-wa	142	Himalaya	103
l|brel-pa-grub-pa	144	Himavata	58
l|brel-wa-bṛtag pa	118	Hinayāna 63, 65, 66, 74, 80	
l|brel-wa-bṛtag-paḥi-l|grel-wa	118	Hindu Logic xiv, 73, 74, 75, 76,	
l|bro	125, 136, 140	89, 101	
l|bro-seṅ-dkar	125	Hira Lal Haṃsarāja	13
l|du-wa	129	Hirapa	37
		Hiravijaya	55
		Historical period	13

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Historical Records ..	39	Inconsistent ..	95
ljam dpal-rtsa-rgyud ..	69	Indescribable ..	25
ljiig-rten ..	129	India xiv, xv, xvi, xvii, xix, xx, 50,	
ljiig-rten-pha-rol-grub-pa ..	132	61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 67, 69,	
Hodgson, Mr. ..	xv, 64	71, 76, 78, 81, 96, 101, 102,	
Hoernle, Dr. ..	9, 23	103, 105, 108, 120, 122, 134,	
Holy saying ..	74	135, 145, 146	
Homogeneous 17, 19, 31, 32, 90,		Indian Logic ..	i, xvii
91, 94, 96, 110, 112, 113, 115		India Office xv, 84, 89, 100, 101,	
Homogeneous example 19, 97, 115		106, 107, 108, 109, 117, 118,	
Hornell, Mr. W. W. ..	xvi	120, 121, 123, 124, 125, 130,	
Hoshang ..	129	132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 138,	
Householder ..	7	139, 140, 141, 143, 144	
Humiliation ..	61	Indirect ..	112
Hun ..	xix, 14, 146	Indirect apprehension ..	28
Huṣkapura ..	xx	Indirect knowledge 4, 9, 10, 15,	
Hwen-thsang 14, 62, 66, 67, 68,		21, 29, 40, 41, 54	
71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 78, 82,		Individual knowledge ..	109
101, 102, 103, 105, 123, 145,		Indra ..	11, 43
146		Indrabhūti ..	2, 3
I		Indra Gomin ..	123
I ..	143	Indravijaya, Muni xiv, 2, 6, 13,	
Identification ..	41	22, 46, 49, 54	
Identity 31, 110, 111, 117, 134		Indriya ..	40, 129
Ignorance ..	21, 32	Indriya-parikṣā ..	127
lhā ..	41	Induction ..	96
Illumination ..	41	Inference 4, 5, 10, 15, 16, 19, 29,	
Illusion ..	59	30, 31, 40, 41, 42, 54, 74, 76,	
Illusory ..	43, 85, 99, 109	86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 99, 109,	
Image ..	11, 109	111, 112, 114, 129	
Immediate ..	43	Inference for one's self 16, 31, 41,	
Imperceptible ..	30, 31	85, 106, 108, 109, 110, 137, 139	
Implied ..	95, 113	Inference for others ..	41
Implied major term ..	113	Inference for the sake of	
Imposition ..	55	others 16, 17, 31, 85, 88, 109,	
Impressions ..	29	111, 112, 137, 139	
Included major term ..	98	Infinite knowledge ..	15
Included middle and major		Inquiring ..	41
terms ..	98	Inseparable ..	96
Included middle term ..	98	Inseparable connection 18, 20, 29,	
Incompatible ..	90, 91, 112	42, 92, 116	
		Instance ..	7

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Instrument	29	Jaina Logic ..	xiii, xvi, xix, 1
Intelligence	97	Jaina system ..	.. xviii
Intercourse	40	Jainendra	54
Internal	42	Jain Vaidya, Mr. ..	23, 25, 28, 33
Internal inseparable connection	42, 76, 141	Jaipur	23, 25, 28, 33
Interpretation	43	Jālandhara	63, 148
Intrinsic	18	Jāmanagara	51
Introduction	xvii	Jambudvīpa	134
Intuition	41	Jambudvipasamāsa ..	9
Invalid	19, 100	Japan	xiv, 63, 73, 74, 75, 76, 89, 101
Invariable accompaniment ..	18	Jarrett, Col.	40
Invariable separation	21	J. A. S. B.	xiii, 70, 71, 80, 122, 124, 125, 138, 140
Inverse connection	97	Jāti	51, 116
Inverse disconnection	98	Jaya Candra	69
Inversion	40	Jayadeva Miśra	xviii
Inverted	97, 98	Jayāditya	123
Inverted connection	20, 116	Jayanta	53
Inverted negation	98	Jayasīmha	38, 39, 44, 46
Ireland 57, 58, 63, 64, 66, 72, 76		Jayasoma	5
Iṣṭavighātakṛt	113	J. B. B. R. A. S. ..	24, 26, 27, 28, 34, 63, 82, 105, 114
Īśvara-bhaṅga-kārikā	130	J. B. T. S.	63, 65, 66, 67, 68, 71, 73, 126, 129, 136, 150
Īśvara Kṛṣṇa	83, 95	Jesalmir	125
Īśvara Sena	106	Jetāri	136, 140, 151
Itaretarābhāva	42	Jetavaniya	65
Itihāsa	62	Jina	xviii, 1, 55, 80, 82, 137
I-tsing 63, 66, 84, 89, 99, 101, 102, 103, 105, 119, 123, 146		Jina Bhadra	137
J		Jinabhāṭa	50
Jacobi, Dr. Herman	xiii, xiv, 1, 5, 13, 49	Jinadatta	32
Jagadīśa	xviii	Jinadattasūri	3
Jagat-svabhāva-vāda-parikṣā	127	Jina Mitra 120, 130, 134, 135, 146	
Jaimini	81	Jinaprabha	1, 3, 9, 51
Jaiminiya	33, 49, 51	Jina Sena	14, 24, 28, 34
Jaina	xiii, xviii, 2, 3, 10, 49, 59, 82, 104, 125	Jinendrabodhi	xvii, 124
Jaina darśana	8, 38	Jineśvara	37
Jainīgama List	46, 54	Jitāri	49
		Jīva	8, 22
		Jivhāvīṇṇāṇa	59

	Page		Page
Jñāna	4	Kanaka Muni	57
Jñānabindu-prakarāṇa ..	54	Kanaka Varma. <i>Vide Hema</i>	
Jñāna Candra .. 51, 52, 146		Varma	
Jñānagarbha .. 118, 120, 131		Kāñci	xx, 80, 81
Jñāna-prasthāna-śāstra ..	66	Kāñcīpura	xx, 102
Jñāna-śrī	137, 138	Kangyur	72, 73
Jñāna-śrī Bhadra .. 117, 137, 138		Kaniṣka 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 78	
Jñāna-śrī Mitra .. 137, 138, 151		Kanva	68
J. P. T. S.	58, 68	Kapila .. 20, 21, 127, 128	
J. R. A. S. .. xix, 57, 58, 63,		Kapilavastu	57
64, 66, 72, 76, 103, 146		Kāraṇa	29, 30, 31
Jyotirvidābharaṇa	15	Kāraṇānupalabdhi	111
Jyotiṣkāvadāna	15	Kāraṇaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111
K		Karma	44, 128
Kabul	139	Karṇa	151
Kādambarī	34	Karṇaripa	70
Kāla	129	Karṇāṭa	xix
Kalasa	12	Kārya 29, 30, 31, 110, 111, 117, 134	
Kālāsoka	58	Kāryahetu	117
Kālidāsa	81	Kārya-kāraṇa-bhāva-siddhi ..	138
Kalikāla Gautama	48	Kāryānupalabdhi	110
Kalikāla Servajña	44	Kāryaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111
Kaliṅga	68, 104	Kāśikā-vṛtti	123
Kālīsāhaka	xviii	Kāśmīra xx, 62, 67, 108, 123, 125,	
Kālīsāhakarī-patrikā ..	xviii	130, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136,	
Kalpanā	109	137, 138, 139, 142, 143, 146, 151	
Kalpasūtra	1, 5, 6, 13	Kāśmīrian	89, 108
Kalyāṇa-kāṇḍa	140	Kassapiya	58
Kalyāṇa-mandira-stava ..	14	Kāṣṭhāsamgha	9
Kalyāṇa Rakṣita	130, 131	Kāśyapa	57, 58
Kamalakulīsa	151	Kāśyapiya	65
Kamala Rakṣita	151, 152	Kathakoṣa	28
Kamalaśīla .. 53, 126, 129, 146		Kathāvatthuppakaraṇa ..	60, 61
Kamala-śīla-tarka	125	Kathāvatthuppakaraṇa-aṭṭha-	
Kamala-śrīla	129	kathā	61
Kaṇabhakṣa	46	Kathiwar	13, 34, 51
Kaṇāda	46, 104	Kātyāyanīputra	64, 66
Kaṇāda Gupta	104	Kaubhīṣaṇin-gotra	9
Kaṇāda Tarkavīgīsa ..	xviii	Kauśāmbī	74, 75, 102
Kāṇa Deva	71	Kauśika	75
		Kavi	23, 25, 33, 47

[illegible]

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Mahāvīracarita ..	2	Manual of Buddhism ..	57
Mahāvīracaritra ..	45	Manusamhitā ..	103
Mahāyāna 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 74, 75, 78, 80, 129, 138, 145		Māra ..	116
Mahāyāna-samparigraha-śāstra ..	74	Mark ..	29, 49, 90, 99
Mahendra Sūri ..	47	Masū Rakṣita ..	149
Maheśa Ṭhakkura ..	xviii	Mathurānātha ..	xviii
Mahinda ..	58	Mati ..	4, 10
Mahi Pāla 134, 135, 148, 149		Maticitra ..	62
Mahīśāsaka ..	65, 74	Matter ..	126
Mahomedan ..	xx, 151	Max Müller ..	71, 75
Mahopādhyāya ..	5	Māyādevī ..	26
Maitreya xix, 57, 73, 74, 75, 78		Mediæval ..	xvii
Major term 16, 18, 29, 30, 31, 41, 55, 76, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 110, 112, 113, 136		Medieval Logic ..	xiii, xviii, xix
Malla ..	34	Medieval school ..	i, xiii, xvii
Malladhāri ..	38, 51	Mediate ..	43
Mallavādin xix, 34, 35, 131		Medicine ..	62, 121
Mallinātha ..	81	Meditation ..	71, 104
Malliṣena ..	51	Meghadūta ..	81
Malwa ..	xviii, 14, 119	Members ..	44
Manah-paryāya ..	4, 10, 41	Menander ..	61
Manak ..	8	Mental ..	59
Manas ..	15, 40, 86, 87	Merutuṅga ..	1
Ma-ñes-pa ..	93	Metaphysical Basket ..	58
Maṅgala ..	126	Metaphysics xviii, 13, 151	
Mañibhadra ..	52	Method of discussion ..	117
Māṇikya Candra ..	35, 36, 47	Metre ..	84
Māṇikya Nandi 26, 28, 33, 34, 37, 40, 54		Middle Age ..	xiv, xx
Mañjunātha ..	100	Middle Country ..	103
Mañjuśrī 80, 82, 83, 84, 123, 125, 136, 142		Middle Path ..	68
Mañjuśrī-mūla-tantra ..	69	Middle term 16, 17, 29, 30, 31, 33, 41, 55, 76, 77, 85, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 117, 136	
Manoratha ..	75, 143	Mi-dmigs-pa ..	110, 134
Manoviññāpa ..	59	Mi-dmigs-paḥi-gtan-tshigs ..	117
Mantra ..	139	Mihirakula ..	xix, 146
Manu ..	103	Milinda ..	61, 62
		Milinda-paūha ..	61, 62
		Mīmāṃsaka 27, 32, 46, 54, 91, 93, 94, 105, 127	

	Page
Mīmāṃsāi	60
Mind 10, 15, 40, 86, 87, 109	
Mine	143
Minor term 16, 17, 18, 29, 30, 33, 41, 76, 90, 91, 93, 95, 110, 112, 136	
Mirok	73
Misconception	18
Mithilā	xxi
Mitra, Dr. R. L. .. 36, 65, 149	
Mñon-sum 85, 99, 106, 108, 109, 129	
Mñon-sum-|tar-nañ .. 99	
Modern	xvii
Modern school	xviii
Mody Keshablal	9
Moggaliputta	60, 61
Mokṣa	8, 21
Momentariness	132
Momentary	17
Monastery xx, 89, 100, 118, 119, 124, 125, 151	
Mongolia	63
Morris, Dr.	59
Mtshan-ñid	129, 134
Mucak	74
Mudita Bhadra	147
Mukhopadhyaya, Justice Asutosh	iii
Muktākumbha	133
Muktāpīḍa	xx
Mūla Sarvāstivāda	65
Mumbha	32
Muni Candra	38, 50
Muniratna	49
Munisundara	6, 39, 53
Muñja	37
Music	62, 104, 121
Muṣṭiharitakī	80
Mu-tig-bum-pa	133
Mutual	42

	Page
Mutual non-existence	24, 25
Myrobalan	80
Mythical	57

N

Nadia	xxi
Nāgadatta	80
Nāga Rakṣita	137
Nāgaravācaka	8
Nāgārjuna 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 122, 145	
Nāga Sena	61, 62
Nāgasena-Bhikṣu-sūtra .. 61	
Nāga Śeṣa	122
Nāgendra gaccha 47, 48, 51	
Ñag-ḥbañs	141
Ñag-tsho-lotsava	148
Naigama	4, 11, 21
Naigamābhāsa	43
Naiyāyika	46, 49, 54, 72
Nālandā xx, 69, 71, 74, 79, 80, 81, 101, 102, 103, 119, 122, 123, 124, 129, 145, 146, 147, 150	
Nālendra	121
Nālo	69, 145
Nāma	11
Nāmamālā	45
Name	11, 85, 86, 99
Nam-mkhañi-goṣ-can .. 127	
Nāṇambā	37
Nanda	3
Nandī Sūtra	3, 4
Nañ-gi-khyab-pa	140
Nārāyaṇa Pāla	149
Narendra-śrī-jñāna .. 151	
Ñāri	148
Naropa	151
Nāsti	24
Nature	126, 127
Nava Dharma	8, 64, 72

	<i>Page</i>		<i>ge</i>
Naya	4, 8, 11, 15, 21, 22, 40, 43, 51, 54, 55	Non-self	.. .. 22
Nayābhāsa	.. .. 43	Nose	.. .. 15, 87
Naya Pāla	141, 142, 148, 149	Notion	.. .. 32
Negation	.. 30, 98, 117	Novice	.. .. 62
Negative	.. 30, 31, 32, 92	Nyagrodhikā	.. .. 9
Nemicandra	46, 47, 69, 70	Nyāsa	.. .. 124
Neminātha	.. .. 39	Nyāya	.. 13, 40, 52, 61, 62, 127
Nepal	.. 57, 63, 71, 121, 141	Nyāya-bhāṣya	xvii, 53, 86, 88
Nibandhana	.. .. 40	Nyāyabhūṣaṇa	.. .. 53
Niebuhrstrasse	.. .. xiv	Nyāyabindu	xix, 41, 53, 54, 109, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 120, 129, 131, 135
Nigamana	.. 8, 16, 31, 42	Nyāyabindupīṇḍārtha	.. 135
Niggaha	.. .. 61	Nyāya-bindu-pūrva-pakṣo-	
Niggaha-catukka	.. .. 61	samkṣipta	.. .. 129
Nighaṇṭuseṣa	.. .. 45	Nyāyabinduṭīkā	xix, 34, 35, 113, 114, 120, 131
Nigliṇa	.. .. 57	Nyāya-dīpikā	.. 54, 82
Nigraha	.. .. 61	Nyāya-dvāra-śāstra	.. 89
Nigrahassthāna	.. .. 51	Nyāya-kalikā	.. .. 53
Nihkṣepa	.. .. 55	Nyāya-kandali	.. .. 51
Nila netra	.. .. 71	Nyāya-khaṇḍa-khāḍya	.. 54
Īi-ma-ṣbaṣ	.. .. 123	Nyāya-kumuda-candrodaya	33
Nirgrantha	.. .. 104	Nyāya-kusumāñjali	.. 53
Nirjarā	.. .. 8	Nyāyālankāra	.. xvii, 53
Nirṇaya	.. 39, 40	Nyāyālankāra-vṛtti	.. 53
Nirṇayasāgara	.. .. 6, 8	Nyāyālokaśiddhi	.. 123
Nirvāṇa	1, 2, 3, 8, 39, 57, 58, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 69, 73, 75, 82, 142, 145	Nyāyāmṛta-taraṅgiṇī	.. 54
Nirvikalpaka	.. .. 20	Nyāyānusāra-śāstra	.. 66
Niryukti	.. .. 6	Nyāyapradīpa	.. .. 54
Nīti	.. 61, 62	Nyāya-praveśa	89, 90, 95, 102, 113, 114
Noble truths	.. .. 20	Nyāya-praveśaka	.. 53
Nomenclature	.. .. 12	Nyāya-praveśaka-sūtra	.. 48
Non-conception	.. .. 18	Nyāya-praveśa-tarka-śāstra	89, 102
Non-distinguished	.. .. 11	Nyāya-praveśo-nāma pramā- ṇa-prakarṇa	89, 102
Non-entity	.. .. 11	Nyāya-rahasya	.. .. 54
Non erroneous	.. 94, 114	Nyāya-sāra	.. .. 53
Non-erroneous contradiction	114	Nyāya-śāstra	.. .. xvii
Non-existence	.. 10, 24, 25, 42	Nyāya-sūtra	xvii, 11, 53, 86, 87, 88, 116
Non-perception	.. 110, 111, 134		
Non-reflective	.. .. 20		

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Nyāya-vārtika	xvii, 53, 81, 85, 88, 89	Padmā	122
Nyāyavārtika-tātparya-ṭikā	xvii, 66, 81, 86, 88	Padmacarita ..	35
Nyāya-vārtika-tātparya-ṭikā-parisuddhi	.. .. xvii	Padma-sambhava ..	129
Nyāyāvatāra	xix, 13, 15, 40, 46, 48, 76, 133	Pag-sam-jon-zang	xv, 82, 84, 119, 121, 122, 123, 124, 129, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 140, 142, 147, 148, 150
Nyāyāvatāra-vivṛti	13, 19, 21, 46, 133	Pakṣa	16, 17, 18, 29, 33, 41, 42, 76, 90, 91, 112
Nyāyāvatāra-vṛtti	48, 49	Pakṣābhāsa	17, 32, 90, 112
Nyāyāvayava	.. .. 85, 89	Pakṣa-prayoga	.. .. 42
Nyāyaviniscaya	.. 26, 37, 40, 54	Pāla	.. xx, 136, 148, 149
Nyāya-viniścaya-vṛtti	.. .. 37	Palhava	.. .. 63
Nyāya-vṛtti	.. .. xvii	Pāli	xiv, 3, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 63, 64, 67, 145
Nyojita-ron	.. .. 77	Palibothra	.. .. 150
O		Pali Buddhist Literature	.. .. 57
Object	29, 95, 99, 109, 110, 129	Pallava	.. xix, xx, 81
Object of knowledge	.. .. 40	Pamiangchi	.. .. xv
Object of sense	.. .. 40	Pañcasiddhāntikā	.. .. 14
Ocean of discussions	.. .. 36	Pan-chen-shwa	.. .. 78
Ocular	.. .. 59	Pāṇḍavapurāṇa	.. .. 23, 26
Odantapura	.. .. 125, 140	Pāṇḍita	xx, 49, 62, 71, 78, 79, 80, 101, 108, 117, 123, 136, 138, 140, 141, 143, 144, 151
Odantapuri	.. .. xx	Pāṇḍita's Cap	.. .. 79
Oldenberg, Dr.	.. .. 58, 59	Pāṇini	.. .. 102, 122, 124
Olfactory	.. .. 59	Pañjikā	.. .. 38, 51
Omniscience	.. .. 141	Paññatti	.. .. 58
Onesided	.. .. 43	Parahita	.. .. 143
Onesided knowledge	.. .. 40	Parahita Bhadra	.. 108, 132, 134
Opponent	40, 44, 98, 104, 112, 116	Paralogism	.. .. 8, 43
Opposition	.. .. 113	Pāralokasiddhi	.. .. xx, 132
Ordination	.. .. 14	Paramahansa	.. .. 48, 50
Organs of sense	.. .. 10	Paramārtha	xix, 76, 109, 146
Orissa	.. .. 80, 81	Paramārthasat	.. .. 109
Orthodox	.. .. 65, 103	Pāramārthika	15, 40, 41, 43
Others	.. .. 143	Pāramārthika pratyakṣa	.. .. 21
Oudh	.. .. xix	Parārtha	.. .. 41
P		Parārthānumāna	16, 31, 85, 109, 111
Padārtha	.. .. 128		

	Page		Page
Parārtha-vākya	106	Pāvā	1
Pariccheda	24, 39	Pearl-oyster	40
Parikṣā	129	Perceptible	30
Parikṣāmukha	28, 37, 54	Perception 4, 10, 15, 16, 19, 29,	
Parikṣāmukha-pañjikā	28, 37	40, 54, 85, 86, 88, 89, 90, 99,	
Parikṣāmukha-sāstra	28	105, 106, 108, 109, 110, 111,	
Parikṣāmukha-sūtra 26, 28, 29, 33,		112, 129, 137, 139	
40		Perfect	41
Parisiṣṭaparvan	1, 45	Perfection	71, 146
Parivrājaka	103	Perfect knowledge	109
Parokṣa 4, 9, 10, 15, 28, 29, 40,		Permanence	128
41, 54		Permanent	128
Pārśva	63	Personal Testimony	16
Pārśvanātha	1, 14, 125	Pervaded	29, 30, 31
Pārśvanātha-caritra 35, 36, 47		Pervader	29, 111
Pārtha Sārathi	81	Pervasion	29
Pārtha Sārathi Mītra	81	Peshwar	xix, 74, 75
Partially	92	Peterson, Professor xiii, xx, 2, 3.	
Particle	95	5, 9, 13, 14, 22, 23, 24, 26,	
Particular 11, 17, 32, 86, 115		28, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 44,	
Particularity	128	45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52,	
Particular property	11	54, 109, 113, 114, 131	
Parts of a syllogism 42, 85, 89		Petitio Principii	70
Party	93	Phakkikā-sāstra	xvii
Pāṭaliputra xviii, 9, 26, 28, 58		Phala	28, 128
Patan	35	Phalavardhigrāma	39
Patañjali	122	Phaṇi Candra	69
Pathak, K. B. 26, 28, 34, 105, 114		Phases	33
Pātharghātā	150	Philosophy	78
Paṭiccasamuppāda	59	Phodang	xv, xvi
Pātimokkha	78	Phyi-rol-gyi-don	129
Paṭiññā	61	Phyi-rol-gyi-don-grub-pa-ceg-	
Patna	9	bya-waḥi-tshig-leḥur	130
Pātra Kesari	28	Phyogs	90
Pātra Kesari Svāmi	28	Phyogs-glan	80
Paṭṭa	38	Phyogs-ltar-nañ	90
Paṭṭadhara	5	Piety Mart	147
Paṭṭāvali 1, 3, 5, 6, 9, 13, 14, 49,		Piṅgala-netra	71
53, 55		Piṭaka	80, 103, 121
Paṭṭāva i-vācanā	3	Piṭakatraya	58
Paudgalika	17	Piṭakattaya	58

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Place	29	Pramāṇa 4, 8, 9, 10, 11,	
Post	25, 123	15, 21, 22, 29, 40, 43, 51, 54,	
Poetry	62	55, 84, 106, 108, 129, 132, 134	
Pole	32	Pramāṇamīmāṃsā 26, 45	
Polemic	77	Pramāṇa-naya - tattvā - lokā-	
Polity	62	laṅkāra 38, 39, 41, 42, 50, 51	
Poona	28	Pramāṇa-nirṇaya	54
Positive	92	Pramāṇa-parīkṣā	27, 54, 132
Posterior	30, 31	Pramāṇa-samuccaya xvii, 80, 82,	
Pothi	125	83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 100,	
Poussin, Louis De La Vallee 70,		108	
106, 108		Pramāṇa-samuccaya-ṭikā xvii, 124	
Prabandha-cintāmaṇi 14, 34		Pramāṇa-samuccaya-vṛtti xvii, 100	
Prabhācandra 23, 24, 28, 33, 34,		Pramāṇa-śūtra	xvii
48, 82		Pramāṇa-śāstra-praveśa	100
Prabhākara	27, 34	Pramāṇa-siddhi	106
Prābhākara	33, 54	Pramāṇa-sūtra-samuccaya	84
Prabhāmitra	146	Pramāṇa-svarūpa	28, 39
Prabhāvākacāritra 14, 35, 38, 39,		Pramāṇa-vārtika .. 53, 106, 118,	
45, 48		124, 135, 142	
Prācīna	5	Pramāṇa-vārtika-kārikā xvii, 103,	
Prācīna Gotra	5	105, 106, 107	
Practical	11, 15, 40	Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra xviii,	
Practical efficiency	110	135, 141	
Practice	71	Pramāṇa-vārtikālaṅkāra-ṭikā	
Pradhāna	126	xviii, 137, 141	
Pradhvaṁsābhāva 24, 42		Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā xvii, 118,	
Pradyumna 14, 35, 36, 45		119	
Prāgabdhāva	24, 42	Pramāṇa-vārtika-pañjikā-ṭikā	
Praṣṭha Pāla	149	xvii, 119	
Prajñākara	27, 53	Pramāṇa-vārtika-ṭikā xviii, 142	
Prajñākara Gupta xviii, 135, 141		Pramāṇa-vārtika-vṛtti xvii, 107,	
Prajñākara Matī	135, 151	124	
Prajñāpāramitā-sūtra	147	Pramāṇa-viniścaya 107, 108, 132,	
Prajñāptivādin	65	138	
Prajñāvarma	120	Pramāṇa-viniścaya-ṭikā 132, 138	
Prakaraṇa	9, 45	Prameya-kamala-mārtanda 28, 33,	
Prakāśa	54	34, 54	
Prākṛta	3, 4, 14	Prameya-ratna-mālā 28, 37, 46	
		Prasamarati	9
		Pratibandhasiddhi	144

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Pratijñā ..	7, 42, 61, 74	Public opinion ..	90
Pratijñā-vibhakti ..	7	Pūjāprakaraṇa ..	9
Pratigedha ..	30	Puṇḍravardhana ..	148
Pratiṣṭhāna ..	6	Punjab ..	xix, 67
Prativādi ..	40, 44	Purāṇa ..	62
Pratyabhijñāna ..	29, 40, 41, 54	Purandara ..	43
Pratyabhijñānābhāsa ..	32	Pure Logic ..	74, 78
Pratyakṣa 4, 9, 10, 15, 28, 29, 49, 54, 74, 85, 99, 105, 106, 109, 129		Pūrṇaka ..	63
Pratyakṣābhāsa ..	32, 99	Pūrnimāgaccha ..	45
Pratyakṣa-svarūpa ..	40	Puruṣa ..	127
Pratyakṣa-vyavasthā ..	108	Puruṣa-parīkṣā ..	127
Pravacana-sāroddhāra-vṛtti ..	37	Pūrva ..	5, 30, 31
Prayāga ..	71, 103	Pūrvāśaila ..	65
Prāyaścitta ..	26	Pustakapāṭhopyāya ..	134
Predicable ..	93	Puṣyā ..	30
Predicate ..	16, 29, 90, 91, 92		
Preface ..	xiii	Q	
Premchand ..	9	Quality ..	43, 93, 95, 128
Premise ..	96	Questions of King Milinda ..	61, 62
Presidency College ..	xvi	Quibble ..	59
President ..	44	Quibbler ..	81, 133
Presumption ..	10, 87		
Priesthood ..	65, 103	R	
Prince of poets ..	81	Raghunātha Siromaṇi ..	xviii
Principles ..	13	Rahasya ..	xviii
Prior ..	30, 31	Rāhuvratin ..	104
Probability ..	10	Rājagaccha ..	35, 36
Procedure ..	40	Rājagiriya ..	58
Professor ..	xiii, 124, 129, 146	Rājagrha ..	3, 58
Proof ..	44, 90, 91, 112, 118	Rāja Pāla ..	149
Properties ..	11	Rājasekhara ..	38, 48, 51, 52
Prophecy ..	62	Rājatarāṅgiṇī ..	xx
Proposition ..	7, 16, 31, 42, 44, 61, 76, 90, 95, 96, 112	Rājavārtika ..	54
Prosody ..	140	Rajgir ..	3, 145, 150
Proximity ..	109	Rajputana ..	28
Pṛthvī ..	2	Rajshahye ..	121, 122
P. T. S. ..	xiv, 59, 60, 61	Rakṣita ..	130
Pubbaseliya ..	58	Ral-pa-can ..	xx, 135, 148
		Rāma ..	43
		Rāmacandra ..	34
		Rāma Pāla ..	149

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Raṇ-ḥahin ..	110, 134	Records ..	13, 66
Raṇ-ḥahin-brtag-pa ..	127	References ..	57
Raṇ-ḥahin-gyi-gtan-tshigs ..	117	Reflective ..	20
Raṇ-don-gyi-rjes-dpag ..	85	Refutation 21, 89, 98, 116, 131	
Raṇ-don-gyi-rjes-su-dpag-pa ..	108	Relation ..	96
Raṇ-gi-don-rjes-su-dpag-pa ..	106	Relative extension ..	92
Raṇ-laṣ-tshaḍ-ma ..	129	Release ..	8
Rasa Pāla ..	149	Reliable authority ..	4, 10
Rāṣṭrakūṭa ..	26	Religion ..	xviii, 13, 78
Rathavīrapura ..	2	Remoteness ..	109
Ratnākara ..	151	Research Society ..	76, 133
Ratnakaraṇḍaka ..	23, 24	Resident ..	xvi
Ratnākara Śānti ..	140, 151	Respondent ..	44
Ratnakīrti ..	140	Restraint ..	8
Ratnaprabha 38, 46, 50, 131, 133		Result ..	43
Ratnarañjaka ..	147	Rgyal-dwañ-blo-groṇ ..	124
Ratnaraśmi ..	xx	Rgyal-wa-can ..	137
Ratnasāgara ..	147	Rgyu-dan-ljbras-buñi-no-wo- grub-pa ..	138
Ratna-śekhara ..	52	Rgyud-gshan-grub-pa ..	118
Ratnavajra ..	139, 151	Rgyud-gshan-grub-paḥi-hgrel- bśaḍ ..	121
Ratnāvalī ..	68	Rgyud-pa ..	129
Ratnāvatārikā ..	51	Rhetoric ..	122, 140
Ratnāvatārikā-pañjikā ..	51	Rhys Davids, Dr. 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 64, 66, 67, 103	
Ratnāvatārikā-ṭippana 51, 52		Right-hand ..	145
Ratnodadhi ..	147	Rigs-ldan-rgyal-po ..	100
Raudrī patrikā ..	xviii	Rigs-pa-can ..	127
Ravi Gupta xvii, xx, 123, 124		Rigs-pa-grub-paḥi-sgron-ma ..	123
Rdo-rje-rgyal-mtshan ..	124	Rigs-paḥi-sbyor-wa ..	139
Rdsas ..	128	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa ..	109
Real ..	43, 109	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-don- bśdus-pa ..	135
Reality ..	66	Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi phyog- śna-ma-ḡdor-bśdus-pa ..	12
Reason 4, 7, 16, 30, 31, 33, 41, 74, 90, 91, 92, 94, 99, 100, 110, 111		Rigs-paḥi-thigs-paḥi-rgya- cher-hgrel-wa ..	131
Reasoning 10, 17, 59, 60, 73, 74, 75, 77, 90, 91, 94, 95, 98, 110, 112, 114, 116, 123, 139		Rigs-paḥi-thigs-pa ṛgya-cher- hgrel-wa ..	120
Recluse ..	60	Rigs-paḥi-yan-lag ..	85, 89
Recognition ..	29, 40, 41, 54		
Recognition of similarity ..	88		
Recollection ..	29, 40, 41, 54		

	Page		Page
Rin-chen-rdo-rje	139	Śabda-Brahma-parikāṣā ..	127
Rjeḥ-dpag-ltar-snañ ..	99	Śabdānumāna	85
Rjeḥ-su-dpag	99	Śabdānusāsana	35
Rjeḥ-su-dpag-pa	129	Sabhāpati	44
Rjeḥ-su-hgro-wa-med ..	97	Sabhya	44
Rjeḥ-su-hgro-wa-phyin-ci-log-		Sacrifice	43, 147
pa	97	Śaddarśana	49
Rjusūtra	4, 11, 21	Śaddarśanasamuccaya ..	48, 49, 50,
Rjusūtrābhāsa	43		52, 53
Rnam-par-rig-pa-tsam-ñid-du-		Śaddarśana-samuccaya-vṛtti	52,
grub-pa	140		53, 133
Rock	81	Saddharma-puṇḍarika ..	64
Rockhill, Mr.	66, 124	Sādhana	29, 90
Rohiṇī	30, 31	Sādhāraṇa	93
Ronki	76	Sādharmya	17, 31, 90, 96
Ronshiki	76	Sādharmya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa	19, 96
Ronshin	76	Sādharmyavat	112
Rṣabhadeva	1	Sādhu	7
Rṣibhāṣita-sūtra	6	Sādhya	16, 18, 19, 29, 76, 90
Rṣimaṇḍala-prakarāṇa-vṛtti	6	Sādhyasama	70
Rtags	99	Śaḍ-lakṣaṇa	134
Rtog-gelhi-skaḍ	138	Sadvāha	68
Rtsod-paḥi-khyu-mchog ..	80	Sāgaracandra	47
Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-pa	117	Sāgarendu	47
Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-h-brel-pa		Sahacara	30, 31
-don-rnam-par-h-byed-pa	125	Sahāvalambha-niścaya ..	136
Rtsod-paḥi-rigs-paḥi-hgrel-wa	120	Saint	80, 83, 109
Rucidatta	xviii	Saka 1, 14, 26, 28, 34, 51, 63, 131	
Rudra	14	Sakābda	63
Rudra Nārāyaṇa	xviii	Sākhā	8
Rudra Nyāyavācaspati ..	xviii	Sakala	41
Rugged hand	81	Sākala	75, 146
Rules of debate	44	Sakra	12, 43
Russia	131	Sakrāditya	145, 146
		Sakti	12
§		Sākya	89, 125
Śabalā	32	Sākyabodhi	xvii, 119
Śabarasvāmi	27, 34	Sākya-ḥoḍ	136, 138, 140, 141
Śabbatthi	58, 66	Sākya Muni	57, 116
Śabda	4, 12, 15, 16, 21	Sākya-simha	121
Śabdābhāsa	43	Sākya-śrī Paṇḍita ..	151

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Sāla Candra	69	Samvat 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 44, 45,	
Sālikā Nātha	54	46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53,	
Salvation 8, 21, 38, 39,		55, 131	
	83	Samvṛti	43
amabhirūḍha	4, 12, 21	Sāmvayavahārika	40
Samabhirūḍhābhāsa	43	Samyaktvaprakaraṇa	46
Sambhūtivijaya	5	Samyaktvaprakāśa	28
Samādhirāja	64	Sam-ye	124, 125
Samāja-guhya	147	Sanātana	136
Samāna	13	Saṅgha	103
Samantabhadra .. 22, 23, 24, 25,		Saṅghabhadra	66, 76
	27, 54	Saṅghārāma	67, 74, 145
Samantapāsādikā	76	Saṅkantika	58
Sāmānya 17, 32, 54, 82, 95, 109,		Saṅkara	23
	128	Saṅkarācārya	xx, 23
Sāmānya-dūṣaṇa-dik-prakāśikā	121	Saṅkarānanda	xviii, 142
Sāmānya-lakṣaṇa	109	Saṅkara Svāmin 89, 101, 102	
Samaraiccakahā	49	Sanskrit	3, 15
Samāropa	40	Sanskrit Buddhist Literature	
Samatata	102		63, 64
Samavāya	129	Sāntakara Gupta	101
Samavāyābhāva	24	Santānāntara-siddhi 117, 121	
Samayabhedoparacana-cakra	119	Santānāntara-siddhi-ṭīkā	121
Sambandha	128	Sānta Rakṣita 79, 124, 125, 126,	
Sambandha-parīkṣā 118, 120, 143			129, 130, 148
Sambandha-parīkṣānusāra	142	Santati	129
Sambandha-parīkṣā-ṭīkā	120	Sānti Bhadra	136, 140
Sambandha-parīkṣā-vṛtti	118	Sāntinātha	xx, 22, 109, 131
Sambhava	10	Sāntipa	140
Samgraha	4, 11, 21	Sānti-geṇa	37
Samgrahābhāsa	43	Sānti Sūri	37
Sāmkhya xix, 27, 33, 46, 49, 51,		Sāntyācārya	37
	62, 65, 91, 95, 125	Saptabhaṅgī	51
Sāmkhya-kārikā	83, 95	Saptabhaṅgī-naya 8, 24, 43, 51	
Sammati-tarka-sūtra 14, 36		Sapta-bhaṅgī-taraṅgiṇī	8
Sammitīya	65, 66	Saptadaśa-bhūmi-sāstra-yogā-	
Sāmprata	12	cārya	72, 73
Samsāra	129	Saraha	68
Samsāya	40	Sarasvatī	iii, 103
Sāmu Pāla	149	Sarasvatīgaccha	6, 9
Samvara	8	Sāriputra	145

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Sarvadarśana-saṃgraha	8, 26, 38, 66, 67, 68, 82, 105, 107, 138	Science	13, 59, 62, 139
Sarvajña Deva	.. 134, 135	Schlagintweit, Dr.	71, 73
Sarvajña Mitra	.. 124	Scripture	4, 15, 16, 29, 32, 40, 41, 58, 114, 121, 129
Sarvajña-siddhi-kārikā	.. 141	Scriptural method	.. 22
Sarvajña-śrī Rakṣita	.. 89	Scriptural testimony	.. 16
Sarvarājagani	.. 3	Sculptor	.. 145
Sarvāstivāda	65, 66, 75, 140	Scythian	.. 62
Saśi	.. 112	Second Council	.. 58
Sākya	.. 89, 100	Sect	2, 58, 65, 66, 67, 74, 75
Sāstra	82, 83, 84, 89, 100, 103, 106, 139	Seish	.. 75
Sāstraja	.. 16	Self	.. 22, 143
Sāstra on the grouped inferences	.. 84	Self-conscious	.. 22
Sāstri, Gaṅgādharma	.. 81	Self-consciousness	.. 109
Sāstri, Hara Prasad	140, 141, 150	Self-evidence	.. 128, 129
Sat	.. 109	Sel-wa-grub-pa	.. 143
Sataka (sāstra)	.. 71	Semblance	.. 17, 28, 116
Sata-sāstra-vaipulya-vyākhyā	102	Semblance of reason	.. 18
Sātavāha	.. 68	Semblance of refutation	21, 116
Sātavāhana	.. 68	Señ-gkar	.. 136
Satru	.. 12	Sensation	.. 111
Satruñjaya	.. 34	Sense	10, 29, 85, 95, 99, 109, 129
Sauddhodani	.. 46, 53	Sense-organ	40, 86, 87, 127
Saugata	17, 27, 33, 46, 54	Sense-perception	.. 10
Sautrāntika	.. 65, 66, 67	Separation	.. 49
Sāvaka	.. 60	Separation unshown	.. 21
Savant	.. xvi	Sermon Basket	.. 58
Savikalpaka	.. 20	Ser-śkyā-pa	.. 127
Sba	.. 130	Serviceable	.. 95
S. B. E. series	.. 58, 59, 61, 62	Seṣa	.. 122
Schiefner, A.	xv, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 74, 80, 81, 82, 103, 106, 118, 119, 121, 123, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137, 139, 140, 141, 142, 145, 148, 150, 152	Seṣ-paḥi-dge-gnas	.. 84
Scholar	.. 62	Seṣ-rab	.. 125
School	xvii, xviii, 66, 104, 140	Seṣ-rab-hbyun-gnas-sba	.. 135
School of thought	.. 62	Seṣ-rab-sdon-bu	.. 69
		Sewell, Mr.	.. xx, 68, 81
		Sgra	.. 129
		Sgrahi-tshañs-pa-brtag-pa	.. 127
		Sgra-rje-dpag	.. 85
		Shalu	.. 78
		Sha - ma - kun - las-lytus-paḥi-hgrel-wa	.. 100

	Page		Page
Shan-shun	137	Simśapā ..	5, 31, 110, 111
Shawl	79	Simultaneity	29
Sherbatski, F. J. 109, 114, 131		Simultaneous	30, 31
Shi-wa-hscho	124	Sitaprabha	123
Shu-chon 120, 121, 130, 131, 135, 140		Si-wa-hi-dge-gnaś	100
Sh'-yen-tōh-cia	68	Skad-cig-ma-hjig-pa-grub-pa ..	132
Siam	63	Skad-cig-ma-hjig-grub - pa-hi - rnam-lgtrel ..	133
Siamese edition	61	Skyes-bu	127
Siddha	35	Skyes-bu-brtag-pa	127
Sido	44	Sky-lotus	18
Siddha-Hema-śabdānuśāsana-brhat-tikā	35	Sloka-vārtika	27, 54
Siddhajayantī-caritra-tikā	2	Sloka-vārtika-bhāṣya	54
Siddhānta	3	Smaraṇa	40, 41
Siddharāja	47	Smaraṇābhāsa	32
Siddharṣi	46, 49	Smith, Vincent A. ..	58, 61, 63
Siddhasena	15, 22, 37	Smṛti	29, 54
Siddhasena Divākara xix, 13, 14, 15, 22, 40, 46, 76		Sñes-than	142
Siddhasena-divākara-vyākhyānaka	46	Sophism	60
Siddhasena Gaṇi	9, 22	Sophist	59, 60, 62
Siddhatthika	58	Sophistry	60
Siddha-vyākhyānaka	46	Sorrow	49, 50
Sign	16, 29	Sotaviññāṇa	59
Sikkim xv, xvi, 89, 99, 118, 119, 125, 130, 135, 138, 142		Soul 8, 10, 15, 22, 41, 43, 44, 60, 72, 91, 95, 112, 127, 128, 129	
Sīla	123	Soul-less	8
Sīlabhadra 101, 102, 103, 146		Sound	127, 129
Silāditya	34	Source of knowledge 106, 108, 112	
Silao	150	Specific property	11, 43
Silasamgama	150	Spell	62
Silver	40	Spyi	128
Simha	123, 124	Srāddha-pratikramana-sūtra-vṛtti	52
Simhagiri	22	Sragdharā-stotra 70, 121, 124, 150	
Simhasūri	22	Sragdharā-stotra-tikā	150
Simhaśisuka	47	Sramaṇa	60
Simhavaktra	80	Srāvaka	137
Simha-vyāghri-lakṣaṇa	48	Sreṣṭha Pāla	149
Similar	88	Srī	106, 136, 140
		Srī Dhānyakāṭaka	xx
		Srīdhara	51

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Sri Harṣa ..	xx, 123	Succession ..	29, 118
Sri Harṣa Deva ..	xx, 132	Such-like ..	12
Sri-jñāna 138, 148, 151		Sudhākara Dvivedi ..	14
Srikāṇṭha ..	xvii, 53	Sudharma Svāmi ..	2
Srīlabdha ..	67	Sudurjaya ..	80
Srīparvata ..	68	Sugata ..	54, 131
Srī-sāla ..	68	Suggestiveness ..	32
Sron-tsan-gam-po ..	104, 105	Sugiura, Dr. xiv, 73, 74, 75, 76,	89, 101
Srughna ..	71		
Sruta ..	4, 10, 22	Suhrllekha ..	68
Srutakevalin ..	5	Suitable ..	12
Sruti ..	129, 130	Sukhabodhikā ṭikā ..	13
Sruti-parīkṣā ..	130	Sukṛtasamkīrtana ..	48
Statement ..	91, 112	Sultanganj ..	150
Stein, Dr. ..	xx	Sumati ..	135, 141
Steinthal, Paul ..	60	Sumati-kīrti ..	131
Sthānūnga-sūtra ..	4, 8, 11	Sum-pa ..	137
Sthāpanā ..	11	Sum-paḥi-choḥ-byuñ ..	63
Sthavira ..	65, 67, 151	Suñ ..	64
Sthira ..	128	Sunāyakaśrī ..	151
Sthira-dūṣaṇa ..	140	Sunaya-śrī Mitra ..	136
Sthiramati ..	121, 146	Sung-yun ..	67, 69
Sthūlabhadra ..	3	Sun-hbyin ..	98
Sthūlahasta ..	81	Sun-hbyin-ltar-snañ-wa ..	99
Stimuli ..	95	Superimposition ..	40
Ston-gshon ..	100	Superior ..	151
St. Petersburg ..	114	Surendrabodhi ..	135
Straight expression ..	11	Sureśvara ..	105
Study ..	10	Sureśvarācārya ..	105
Stūpa ..	xx, 68	Sūri ..	39, 45, 53, 55
Suali, Dr. ..	49, 52, 133	Surname ..	46, 48
Subhakara Gupta ..	151	Sūrya-prajñapti-sūtra ..	6
Subhatuṅga ..	26	Sūtra 8, 10, 45, 103, 121, 139, 140	
Subhūti-sānta ..	140	Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-niryukti ..	8
Subhūti-śrī ..	118	Sūtra-kṛtāṅga-sūtra ..	6
Subhūti-śrī-sānti ..	106	Sūtrālaṅkāratīkā ..	73
Subject ..	29, 90, 91	Sūtrānta ..	67
Subsequent ..	42	Sūtra upadeśa ..	63
Subsequent non-existence 24, 25		Sutta ..	58
Substance ..	43, 93, 95, 128	Suttanta ..	67
Subtle ..	12	Sutta piṭaka ..	58, 59, 60, 63

	Page	T	Page
Suvarṇa-prabhāsa ..	64	Tactual ..	59
Suviṣṇu ..	145	Takakusu xix, 63, 64, 66, 76, 84,	
Svabhāva 31, 110, 111, 117, 134		89, 99, 101, 102, 103, 105,	
Svabhāva-hetu ..	117	119, 123, 146	
Svabhāvānupalabdhi ..	110	Takka ..	60
Svabhāva-parikṣā ..	127	Takki ..	59, 60
Svabhāvaviruddhopalabdhi	111	Takkika ..	59, 60
Svalakṣaṇa ..	109	Takṣaṣilā ..	67
Svārtha ..	41	Tāmraśāṭiya ..	65
Svārthānumāna 16, 31, 85, 106,		Tangyur xx, 62, 70, 72, 78, 84, 85,	
108, 109, 110		89, 99, 100, 101, 106, 107,	
Svarūpa ..	40	108, 109, 117, 118, 119, 120,	
Svarūpasambodhana ..	26	121, 123, 124, 125, 129, 130,	
Svataḥ-prāmāṇya ..	129	131, 132, 134, 135, 136, 137,	
Svatantra ..	124	138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143,	
Svatantra Mādhyamika school	124	144, 150	
Svāti ..	9	Tantra 70, 124, 129, 140, 146, 147	
Svāti-tanaya ..	9	Tāntric ..	124
Svayambhūstotra ..	23	Tapāgaccha ..	1, 3, 52, 55
Svetāmbara xviii, 1, 2, 5, 6, 9, 14,		Tapāgacchapattāvalī ..	48
22, 34, 35, 36, 38, 48, 50, 51,		Tārā ..	121, 122
52, 54		Tārānātha, Lama xv, 66, 67, 68,	
Syādasti ..	24	69, 70, 71, 72, 74, 80, 81, 82,	
Syād-nāsti ..	24	103, 106, 118, 119, 121, 123,	
Syādvāda ..	8, 22, 23, 24	130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 137,	
Syādvāda-kalikā ..	51	139, 140, 141, 142, 145, 148,	
Syādvāda-mañjarī ..	51	150, 151, 152	
Syādvāda-ratnāvatārikā 38, 50,		Tarka ..	29, 40, 41, 54
131, 133		Tarkabhāṣā 53, 54, 55, 138, 139	
Syādvādaratnāvatārikā-pañ-		Tarkābhāsa ..	32
jikā ..	38	Tarka-nyāya ..	117, 120
Syādvāda-śrūta ..	22	Tarka-puṅgava ..	80, 81
Syādvāda-vidyāpati ..	54	Tarka-rahasya-dīpikā ..	52
Syāt ..	8	Tarkasaṃgraha ..	126, 128
Syllogism 6, 7, 16, 29, 42, 77, 85,		Tarka-śāstra ..	xvii, 76, 77
89, 92, 114, 136		Tarka-tīkā ..	133
Syllogistic ..	76	Tarkī ..	60
Synonyms ..	12	Tārkika ..	26, 59, 72, 73
System ..	xiii, 49	Tārkika-cakra-cūḍāmaṇi ..	26
Systematic ..	13	Tarkin ..	59
Systems of philosophy ..	33	Tashilhunpo ..	78

			<i>Page</i>
Trikāla-parīkṣā	..	..	101
Trilokasāra	..	..	1
Trimalaya	..	..	103
Tripitaka	..	58, 61, 64,	80
Tri-rūpa-hetu	..	..	85
Triṣaṣṭiśālākāpuruṣa-caritra			45
Truth	..	..	44
Tsandrahi-khron-pa		..	123
Tshab-ni-ma-grags	..	..	132
Tshaḍ-ma	..	..	129
Tshaḍ-ma-brtag-pa		..	132
Tshaḍ-ma-grub-pa	..	..	106
Tshaḍ-maḥi-bstan-bcos-rig-pa-			
la-hjug-pa	..	..	100
Tshaḍ-maḥi-mdo-kun-laḥ-btuḥ-			
pa	..	..	84
Tshaḍ-ma kun-laḥ-btuḥ-pa	..	..	84
Tshaḍ-ma-rigs-par-hjug-paḥi-			
sgo	..	..	89
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-ḍkaḥ-			
hgrel	..	..	118
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-			
bśaḍ	..	119,	142
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-			
pa	..	..	124
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-hgrel-			
wa	..	..	107
Tshaḍ - ma - rnam - hgrel - gyi-			
rgyan	..	..	135
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-rgyan			
-gyi-hgrel-bśaḍ	..	..	137
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-gyi-tahig			106
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-hgrel-rgyan-			
gyi-hgrel-bśaḍ	..	..	141
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-ñes-kyi-ṭikā			132
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-par-ñes-pa	..	..	108
Tshaḍ-ma-rnam-par-ñes-paḥi-			
hgrel-bśaḍ	..	..	138
Tshig-gi-don	..	..	128
Tsin		61,	64
Tshul-gsum	..	..	91
Tshul-hkhrims-rgyal-mtshan			101

			<i>Page</i>
Turuṣka ..	62, 147,	151, 152	
Tutelary ..	..	..	121
Type ..	..	5, 16, 40	
U			
Udāharana ..	..	..	31
Udāna ..	..	..	60
Udayana ..	..	53, 54	
Udayanācārya ..	..	xvii, 49	
Udayaprabha ..	..	47, 48, 51	
Udyāna ..	..	..	139
Udyotakara xvii,	27, 34, 53, 81,		
	85, 88, 89, 105		
Ūha ..	..	..	29
Ujjainī ..	..	xviii, 14, 15	
Umā ..	..	..	9
Umāsvāmin ..	..	..	9
Umāsvātī xiii,	4, 8, 9, 10, 12, 22,		
	23		
Uncertain 19, 93, 94,	100, 112, 113		
Uncertainty ..	..	..	40
Unconnected ..	..	.. 19, 116	
Unfamiliar ..	..	..	91
Universal ..	..	95, 96, 97	
Universal connection	55, 92, 96		
Universal proposition	95, 97		
University i, xvi, xx, xxi,	79, 101,		
	102, 103, 135, 138, 139, 140,		
	141, 145, 146, 147, 150, 151		
University studies	..	..	1
Unproved ..	..	18, 93, 112	
Unravelling ..	..	..	62
Unseparated ..	..	..	21
Upadeśamālā-ṭīkā ..	..	..	38
Upadeśamālā-viśeṣa-vṛtti	..	..	46
Upadeśamālā-vṛtti	..	..	50
Upalabdhi ..	..	..	30
Upamāna ..	..	4, 10, 74, 85	
Upanaya ..	..	16, 31, 42, 61	
Upanaya-catukka	..	..	61
Upāṅgas ..	..	..	3

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Upaniṣad ..	127, 128	Vairocana ..	123
U-pa-ni-ṣa-di-kaṣ ..	128	Vaiśālī ..	58, 71
Upāsaka 103, 122, 123, 139		Vaiśeṣika 27, 46, 49, 62, 65, 82, 91	
Upāsakādhyayana	23, 24		94, 127
Upavarṣa ..	33	Vaiṣṇava ..	xx
Urddhvatā ..	32	Vajiriya ..	58
Utpādasiddhi-prakaraṇa ..	45	Vajra ..	80, 145
Utsarpiṇī ..	1	Vajracchedikā ..	75
Uttara ..	30, 31	Vajrasākhā ..	44
Uttaradharma ..	67	Vajrāsana ..	139, 141
Uttarādhyayana-bṛhad-vṛtti	37	Vajravarāhī ..	139
Uttarādhyayana-sūtra ..	6	Vāk-praja or Vāgbhaṭa	141
Uttaravāhīni ..	150	Vākyapadiya ..	27
Uvāsagadasāo ..	23	Valabhi ..	xviii, 13
		Valid ..	94, 100
V		Validity ..	74
Vācakācārya ..	8	Valid knowledge 4, 10, 15, 16, 19,	
Vācaka-śramaṇa ..	8	21, 28, 29, 32, 40, 43, 54, 55,	
Vācaspati ..	53, 105	84, 99, 109, 110, 129, 132	
Vācaspati Miśra xvii, 23, 49, 66,			
81, 86, 88, 105		Vana Pāla ..	131, 149
Vāda ..	8, 44	Vande-dpal-bṛtsegs ..	121
Vāda-mahārṇava ..	36, 37	Vande-nam-mkhaṇ ..	118, 120
Vāda-nyāya ..	117, 120, 125	Vande-yo-seṇ-de ..	120, 135
Vāda-nyāya-vṛtti-vipaṇcitār-		Varāhamihira ..	6, 14
tha ..	125	Vararuci ..	122
Vāda-nyāya-vyākhyā ..	120	Vardhamāna ..	1, 54
Vādi ..	40, 44	Vardhamāna-sūri ..	3
Vādin ..	34	Vārendra 121, 122, 123, 124, 136,	
Vādipravara ..	38	148, 151	
Vāgbhaṭa: vide Vākpraja.		Vasubandhu xix, 74, 75, 76, 78,	
Vāgīśvarakīrti ..	137, 141, 151	80, 81, 146	
Vāhyārtha ..	129	Vasubhūti ..	2
Vāhyārtha-siddhi-kārikā ..	130	Vasudhara ..	141
Vaibhāṣika 65, 66, 67, 74, 75, 78,		Vasudhara Rakṣita ..	100
130		Vasu Mitra ..	63
Vaidharṁya ..	17, 20, 31, 90	Vatsagotra ..	9
Vaidharṁya-dṛṣṭāntābhāsa 20, 21,		Vātsīputra ..	66, 128
97		Vātsīputriya ..	65, 66, 80
Vaidharṁyavat ..	112	Vātsī-sūta ..	9
Vaidūryakarmo ..	148	Vātsyāyana xvii, 53, 86, 87	
Vairasvāmi ..	47	Vaṭṭagāmaṇi ..	58

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Veda	62, 103	Vikala	41
Vedāṅga	103	Vikrama 1, 2, 35, 63, 131	
Vedānta	51	Vikramāditya xix, xx, 6, 14, 15,	
Vedāntasūtra ..	23, 105	22, 81, 146	
Vedāntin	82	Vikramaṇipura	117
Veṅgi	81, 82	Vikrama saṁvat	49
Veṅkaṭṭa	36	Vikramaśilā xx, xxi, 79, 135, 136,	
Verbal	12, 42	137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 146,	
Verbal fallacy ..	43	148, 150, 151	
Verbal testimony 4, 10, 15, 32, 40,		Vimala Candra	119, 140
41, 85, 88, 89, 130		Vimala Dāsa	8
Vibhāṣā	66	Vimamsā	60
Vibhāṣā-śāstra ..	67	Vimamsi	60
Vibhāṣā-vinaya ..	76	Vinaya	146
Vicāraṁṛta-saṁgraha ..	48	Vinayāditya	xx
Vicāra-ratna-saṁgraha ..	5	Vināyaka	133
Vicāra-sāra-prakaraṇa 1, 14, 48		Vinaya Pīṭaka 57, 58, 59, 63, 78	
Vicāra-reṇī	1	Vinaya Vibhāṣā	63
Vicitrādvaitasiddhi ..	140	Vinaya Vijaya Gaṇi	13
Victory	44	Vindhya	103, 104, 148
Vidarbha	68	Vinīta Deva	119, 121, 140
Vidhi	30	Viññāṇa	59
Vidyabhusana, Satis Chandra		Vipakṣa	7
i, xvi, xxi, 63, 66, 67, 68, 70,		Vipakṣa-pratiśedha	7
71, 72, 76, 80, 121, 122, 124,		Viparītānvaya .. 20, 21, 97, 116	
133, 138, 140, 150		Viparyaya	40
Vidyādhara	121	Vīra	13, 35
Vidyāmātra-siddhi-śāstra-		Viraha	49, 50
vyākhyā	102	Viruddha 18, 94, 111, 113	
Vidyānanda 23, 26, 27, 28, 34, 37,		Viruddhakāryopalabdhi ..	111
82, 105		Viruddhāvyaḥhicāri	114
Vienna	35	Viruddhavyāptopalabdhi ..	111
Vienna Oriental Journal ..	35	Viśālāmālavatī	xvii, 124
Vigraha Pāla	149	Viśālāmālavatī-nāma-pramāṇa-	
Vigraha-vyavartanī-kārikā ..	70	samuccaya-ṭikā xvii, 124	
Vigrahavyavartanī vṛtti ..	70	Viśaya	23, 40
Vihāra	xx, 104, 125	Viśeṣa	17, 32, 128
Vijaya	37	Viṣṇuvardhana	81
Vijayasena	47, 50	Visual	10
Vijñāna	59	Viśuddha-siṁha	121, 130
Vijñapti-mātra-siddhi ..	140	Viśvanātha	xvii

	<i>Page</i>		<i>Page</i>
Vitaṇḍa	62	Word for the sake of others	106
Vītarāgaśtuti	51	Wordsworth, Mr. W. C. ..	xvi
Vivartavāda	129	Wordy	62
Vivṛti	13, 133	World	60, 129
Vow	5, 45	World-renowned	37
Vrata	5, 45		
Vṛddhavādi	14	X	
Vṛhadgaccha	50	Xylograph xv, 72, 100, 101, 108,	109, 121, 125
Vṛhat-svayambhū-purāṇa ..	150	Y	
Vyāghra-śiśuka	47	Yajña	147
Vyāpaka	29, 111	Yākinī	48
Vyāpakānupalabdhi	111	Yakṣa Pāla	149
Vyāpakaviruddhopalabdhi ..	111	Yamāri	xviii, 141
Vyāpti .. 18, 20, 29, 42, 48, 92		Yaśodharma Deva	14
Vyāptigraha	55	Yaśovijaya 39, 50, 51, 52, 54, 131	133
Vyāpya	29, 30, 31	Yaśovijaya Gaṇi	54
Vyātireka	32	Yaśovijaya-granthamālā 6, 39, 52,	53, 55
Vyātireki	31	Yaśovijaya Pāṭhaśālā	55
Vyavahāra	4, 11, 21	Yauga	54
Vyavahārābhāsa	43	Yoga 10, 27, 33, 62, 65, 71, 73, 83	
Vyavahāra-sūtra	6	Yogācāra xix, 51, 66, 67, 71, 72,	74, 75, 78, 102, 122
Vyāvahārika	15	Yogācārya	71
		Yogācārya-bhūmi-sāstra	83
W		Yogaśāstra	45
Waddell, Col. 78, 124, 129, 151		Yogin	141
Wassilief	67, 105	Yuan Chwang 63, 67, 68, 71, 72,	73, 74, 75, 80, 146
Wassiljew	68	Yuga-pradhāna	5
War	62	Yuga-pravara	5
Water	22	Yuka Ron	73
Watters, Mr. 63, 67, 68, 71, 72, 73,	74, 75, 80, 146	Yukti-prayoga	139
Weber, Dr. 3, 4, 5, 37, 50, 51, 53		Yuktiśaṣṭikā kārīkā	70
Weir Smyth	4	Yuktyanūsāsana	23
Wenzel, Dr.	71	Yul-lho-phyog	107
Wheel	100		
Wheel of Reasons	99, 100	Z	
White, Mr. Claude	xvi	Za-hor	99, 124
Wijesinha .. 58, 61, 66, 67		Zaschuh	75
Williams, Monier	63	Zla-wa-dge-baſten	121
Winding up	62		
Word .. 85, 88, 89, 106, 111			

